

**IN THE UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT
FOR THE WESTERN DISTRICT OF PENNSYLVANIA**

THE SCHOOL DISTRICT OF PITTSBURGH

Plaintiff,

v.

META PLATFORMS, INC.; META
PAYMENTS INC.; SICULUS, INC.;
FACEBOOK OPERATIONS, LLC;
INSTAGRAM, LLC; SNAP INC.; TIKTOK,
LTD.; TIKTOK, LLC; TIKTOK, INC.;
BYTEDANCE LTD.; BYTEDANCE INC.;
GOOGLE LLC; and YOUTUBE, LLC,

Defendants.

Case No. 2:23-cv-00577

AMENDED COMPLAINT

JURY TRIAL DEMANDED

Plaintiff The School District of Pittsburgh (“Plaintiff”) brings this action against Defendants Meta Platforms, Inc.; Meta Payments Inc.; Siculus, Inc.; Facebook Operations, LLC; Instagram, LLC; Snap Inc.; TikTok, Ltd.; TikTok, LLC; TikTok, Inc.; ByteDance Ltd.; ByteDance Inc.; Google LLC; and YouTube, LLC (collectively, “Defendants”) and alleges as follows based on personal knowledge as to their own acts and on investigation conducted by counsel as to all other allegations:

INTRODUCTION

1. American children are suffering an unprecedented mental health crisis fueled by Defendants’ addictive and dangerous social media platforms.

2. In the past decade, Americans’ engagement with social media grew exponentially, nowhere more dramatically than among our country’s youth. That explosion in usage is no accident. It is the result of Defendants’ studied efforts to induce young people to compulsively use their services—Instagram, Facebook, TikTok, Snapchat, and YouTube. Borrowing heavily from

the behavioral and neurobiological techniques used by slot machines and exploited by the cigarette industry, Defendants deliberately embedded in their services an array of design features aimed at maximizing youth engagement to drive advertising revenue. Defendants know children are in a developmental stage that leaves them particularly vulnerable to the addictive effects of these features. Defendants target them anyway, in pursuit of additional profit.

3. The defects in Defendants’ services vary by platform, but all exploit children and adolescents. They include but are not limited to an algorithmically-generated, endless feed to keep users scrolling in an induced “flow state;” “intermittent variable rewards” that manipulate dopamine delivery to intensify use; “trophies” to reward extreme usage; metrics and graphics to exploit social comparison; incessant notifications that encourage repetitive account checking by manufacturing insecurity; inadequate, essentially illusory age verification protocols; and deficient tools for parents that create the illusion of control.

4. The resulting ubiquity of Defendants’ services in the lives and palms of our kids, and the ensuing harm to them, is hard to overstate. Today, over a third of 13- to 17-year-old kids report using one of Defendants’ apps “almost constantly” and admit this is “too much.” Yet more than half of these kids report that they would struggle to cut back on their social media use. Instead of feeding coins into machines, kids are feeding Defendants’ platforms with an endless supply of attention, time, and data.

5. Defendants’ choices have generated extraordinary corporate profits—and yielded immense tragedy. Suicide rates for youth are up an alarming 57%. Emergency room visits for anxiety disorders are up 117%. In the decade leading up to 2020, there was a 40% increase in high school students reporting persistent sadness and hopelessness, and a 36% increase in those who attempted to take their own lives. In 2019, one in five high school girls had made a suicide plan.

In 2021, one in three girls seriously considered attempting suicide. Children and their parents and guardians across the country have struggled to cope with the severe, lasting damage visited on their families by anxiety, depression, addiction, eating disorders, self-harm, suicidality, and the loss of outliving one's child.

6. This lawsuit follows on a growing body of scientific research, including Defendants' own internal (previously concealed) studies, that draws a direct line between Defendants' conscious, intentional design choices and the youth mental health crisis gripping our nation. Instagram, Facebook, TikTok, Snapchat, and YouTube have rewired how our kids think, feel, and behave. Disconnected "Likes" have replaced the intimacy of adolescent friendships. Mindless scrolling has displaced the creativity of play and sport. While presented as "social," Defendants' platforms have in myriad ways promoted disconnection, disassociation, and a legion of resulting mental and physical harms.

7. The U.S. Surgeon General recently explained that children versus Big Tech is "just not a fair fight."¹ "You have some of the best designers and service developers in the world who have designed these services to make sure people are maximizing the amount of time they spend on these platforms. And if we tell a child, use the force of your willpower to control how much time you're spending, you're pitting a child against the world's greatest product designers."

8. Over the past decade, Defendants have relentlessly pursued a strategy of growth-at-all-costs, recklessly ignoring the impact of their services on children's mental and physical health and well-being.² In a race to corner the "valuable but untapped" market of tween and teen

¹ Allison Gordon & Pamela Brown, *Surgeon General says 13 is 'too early' to join social media*, CNN (Jan. 29, 2023), <https://www.cnn.com/2023/01/29/health/surgeon-general-social-media/index.html>. Exhibits and referenced materials are incorporated in this complaint as if fully stated herein.

² See, e.g., Haugen_00000934 ([REDACTED]).

users, each Defendant designed platform features to promote repetitive, uncontrollable use by kids.³

9. Adolescents and children are central to the Defendants’ business models. These age groups are highly connected to the Internet, more likely to have social media accounts, and more likely to devote their downtime to social media usage. Additionally, youth influence the behavior of their parents and younger siblings. As one Defendant put it, “los[ing] the teen foothold in the U.S.” would mean “los[ing] the pipeline” for growth.⁴

10. Recognizing the power of engaging young users, Defendants deliberately tweaked the design and operation of their apps to exploit the psychology and neurophysiology of kids. Because children’s and adolescents’ brains are not fully developed, they lack the same emotional maturity, impulse control, and psychological resiliency as adults. As a result, they are uniquely susceptible to addictive features in digital platforms and highly vulnerable to the consequent harms. Knowing this, Defendants wrote code designed to manipulate dopamine release in children’s developing brains and, in doing so, create compulsive use of their apps.

11. Defendants’ strategy paid off. Users of their now services number in the billions, and the frequency and time spent by these users has grown exponentially. This has allowed Defendants to harvest a vast amount of personal user data—from the school you attend, to the sneakers you covet, to the places you’ve been and the people you’ve met. This, in turn, has allowed

³ Georgia Wells & Jeff Horwitz, *Facebook’s Effort to Attract Preteens Goes Beyond Instagram Kids*, *Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 28, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-instagram-kids-tweens-attract-11632849667>; see also Haugen_00022339.

⁴ Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles with Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 26, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

Defendants to mint a fortune, by selling to others the ability to micro-target advertisements to incredibly narrow slices of the public.⁵

12. Defendants’ growth has come at the expense of its most vulnerable users: children around the world, who they cultivated and exploited. Children are not merely the collateral damage of Defendants’ services. They are the direct victims of the intentional platform design choices made by each Defendant. They are the intended targets of the harmful features that pushed them into self-destructive feedback loops.

13. As a direct result of Defendants’ successful promotion of their dangerous services, the rates of mental health issues among children have climbed steadily since 2010. By 2018, suicide was the second leading cause of death for youth.⁶

14. Weeks later, the U.S. Surgeon General issued an advisory “to highlight the urgent need to address the nation’s youth mental health crisis.”⁷ In a scathing rebuke of the assault on our children, the Surgeon General recognized the dangerous designs in Defendants’ services and Defendants’ abdication of responsibility for the resulting harms:

In these digital public spaces, which are privately owned and tend to be run for profit, there can be tension between what’s best for the technology company and what’s best for the individual user or for society. Business models are often built around maximizing user engagement as opposed to safeguarding users’ health and ensuring that users engage with one another in safe and healthy ways

[T]echnology companies must step up and take responsibility for creating a safe digital environment for children and youth.
Today, most companies are not transparent about the impact of their

⁵ See Snap, Inc., 2022 Annual Report (Form 10-K) at 15 (Jan. 31, 2023) (“[W]e rely heavily on our ability to collect and disclose data[] and metrics to our advertisers so we can attract new advertisers and retain existing advertisers. Any restriction or inability, whether by law, regulation, policy, or other reason, to collect and disclose data and metrics which our advertisers find useful would impede our ability to attract and retain advertisers.”).

⁶ CDC, *Deaths: Leading Causes for 2018*, 70(4) National Vital Statistics Reports at 10 (May 17, 2021), <https://www.cdc.gov/nchs/data/nvsr/nvsr70/nvsr70-04-508.pdf>.

⁷ Press Release, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs., *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic* (Dec. 7, 2021), <https://www.hhs.gov/about/news/2021/12/07/us-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic.html>.

products, which prevents parents and young people from making informed decisions and researchers from identifying problems and solutions.⁸

15. The Surgeon General's comments have since been echoed by President Biden himself. In both his 2022 and 2023 State of the Union Addresses, the President urged the nation to "hold social media platforms accountable for the national experiment they're conducting on our children for profit."⁹ In a January 11, 2023, op-ed, President Biden amplified this point: "The risks Big Tech poses for ordinary Americans are clear. Big Tech companies collect huge amounts of data on the things we buy, on the websites we visit, on the places we go and, most troubling of all, on our children."¹⁰ The President observed that "millions of young people are struggling with bullying, violence, trauma and mental health" as a result of Defendants' conduct and platforms, and again stated that "[w]e must hold social-media companies accountable" for their role in this crisis.¹¹

16. These statements by President Biden and the Surgeon General are in line with a substantial body of peer-reviewed scientific literature documenting the harmful impact that Defendants' apps have on our children. This body of research demonstrates that Defendants' dangerously designed platforms can cause the harms that children suffer: addiction, compulsive use, anxiety, depression, eating disorders, body dysmorphia, self-harm, sexual exploitation, suicidal ideations, other serious diseases and injuries, and suicide itself. Overall rates of these

⁸ U.S. Surgeon General's Advisory, *Protecting Youth Mental Health* (Dec. 7, 2021), <https://www.hhs.gov/sites/default/files/surgeon-general-youth-mental-health-advisory.pdf> (emphasis in original).

⁹ The White House, President Biden's State of the Union Address (Mar. 1, 2022), <https://www.whitehouse.gov/state-of-the-union-2022/>; see also The White House, *President Biden's State of the Union Address* (Feb. 7, 2023), <https://www.whitehouse.gov/state-of-the-union-2023/>.

¹⁰ Joe Biden, *Republicans and Democrats, Unite Against Big Tech Abuses*, Wall St. J. (Jan. 11, 2023), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/unite-against-big-tech-abuses-social-media-privacy-competition-antitrust-children-algorithm-11673439411>.

¹¹ Joe Biden, *Republicans and Democrats, Unite Against Big Tech Abuses*, Wall St. J. (Jan. 11, 2023), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/unite-against-big-tech-abuses-social-media-privacy-competition-antitrust-children-algorithm-11673439411>.

disorders have increased greatly because of widespread consumption of Defendants' platforms by children in this country and across the world.

17. Defendants knew or should have known about the risks of such addiction—which at least one Defendant euphemistically calls [REDACTED]¹² They could have changed their services to avoid the harm. They could have warned the public about the danger. Instead, Defendants placed growth first.

18. Excessive and compulsive use of social media by children and the youth mental health crisis have not only caused serious harm to children, families, and communities, but also the institutions dedicated to caring for children. School districts, including Plaintiff, have no choice but to address the consequences of Defendants' harmful social media services, including bullying, depression, suicide, acting out, disrupting class, and engaging in dangerous social media "challenges." School districts have been forced to expend substantial time and resources combatting excessive use of social media in schools, educating about the harm of social media and its warped version of reality, and treating the direct mental health consequences of Defendants' social media platforms. The burden placed on school districts to address the harm caused by Defendants' social media services was the foreseeable and inevitable consequence of Defendants' negligence, recklessness, and greed.

19. Plaintiff seeks to recover damages from Defendants and hold them responsible for the harm caused by their wrongful conduct. That conduct includes: (a) designing dangerous services that caused serious mental, emotional, and physical harm to users and others; (b) failing

¹² See Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016379 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016412, Haugen_00016490
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00016373 at
Haugen_00016379 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

to provide adequate warnings about serious and reasonably foreseeable health risks from use of the service; (c) failing to utilize reasonable care in, among other things, developing, designing, managing, operating, testing, producing, labeling, marketing, advertising, promoting, controlling, selling, supplying, and distributing their services; and (d) as to Meta, engaging in the deliberate concealment, misrepresentation, and obstruction of public awareness of serious health risks to users of its services.

THE PARTIES

I. PLAINTIFF

20. Plaintiff The School District of Pittsburgh a public school district in Allegheny County, Pennsylvania. Plaintiff is the largest school district in Allegheny County and the second largest in Pennsylvania. Plaintiff serves approximately 25,000 students in pre-kindergarten through 12th grade in 54 schools. Plaintiff has over 4,000 employees and an operating budget of \$685 million.

II. DEFENDANTS

A. Meta

21. Defendant Meta Platforms, Inc. (“Meta Platforms”) is a Delaware corporation and multinational technology conglomerate. Its principal place of business is in Menlo Park, CA.

22. Meta Platforms’ subsidiaries include, but may not be limited to, the entities identified in this section, as well as a dozen others whose identity or involvement is presently unclear.

23. Defendant Meta Payments Inc. (“Meta Payments”) is a wholly owned subsidiary of Meta Platforms that was incorporated in Florida on December 10, 2010. Facebook 1 manages, secures, and processes payments made through Meta Platforms, among other activities. Its principal place of business is in Menlo Park, CA.

24. Defendant Siculus, Inc. (“Siculus”) is a wholly owned subsidiary of Meta Platforms that was incorporated in Delaware on October 19, 2011. Siculus constructs data facilities to support Meta Platforms’ platforms. Its principal place of business is in Menlo Park, CA.

25. Defendant Facebook Operations, LLC (“Facebook Operations”) is a wholly owned subsidiary of Meta Platforms that was incorporated in Delaware on January 8, 2012. Facebook Operations is likely a managing entity for Meta Platforms’ other subsidiaries. Meta Platforms is the sole member of this LLC, whose principal place of business is in Menlo Park, CA.

26. Defendant Instagram, LLC launched an app called Instagram in October 2010. On or around April 7, 2012, Meta Platforms purchased Instagram, LLC for over one billion dollars and reincorporated the company in Delaware. Meta Platforms is the sole member of this LLC, whose principal place of business is in Menlo Park, CA.

27. Meta Platforms, Meta Payments, Siculus, Facebook Operations, and Instagram, LLC are referred to jointly as “Meta.”

28. Meta owns, operates, controls, produces, designs, maintains, manages, develops, tests, labels, markets, advertises, promotes, supplies, and distributes digital platforms available through mobile- and web-based applications (“apps”), including Instagram and Facebook (together, “Meta platforms”); Messenger; and Messenger Kids. Meta’s apps and devices are widely distributed to consumers throughout the United States.

B. Snap

29. Defendant Snap Inc. (“Snap”) is a Delaware corporation. Its principal place of business is in Santa Monica, CA.

30. Snap owns, operates, controls, produces, designs, maintains, manages, develops, tests, labels, markets, advertises, promotes, supplies, and distributes the app Snapchat. Snapchat is widely available to consumers throughout the United States.

C. ByteDance

31. Defendant ByteDance Ltd. is a global company incorporated in the Cayman Islands. Its principal place of business is in Beijing, China. ByteDance Ltd. also maintains offices in the United States, Singapore, India, and the United Kingdom, among other locations.

32. ByteDance Ltd. wholly owns its subsidiary Defendant ByteDance Inc., a Delaware corporation whose principal place of business is in Mountain View, CA.

33. ByteDance Ltd.’s key Chinese subsidiary is Beijing Douyin Information Service Limited f/k/a Beijing ByteDance Technology Co. Ltd. (“Beijing ByteDance”).¹³ Beijing ByteDance owns, operates, and holds key licenses to Douyin, the Chinese version of TikTok. On or around April 30, 2021, the Chinese government took a 1% stake in, and received one of three seats on the board of directors of, Beijing ByteDance.¹⁴ Specifically, 1% of Beijing ByteDance is now owned by WangTouZhongWen (Beijing) Technology, which in turn is owned by China Internet Investment Fund (China’s top Internet regulator and censor), China Media Group (China’s national broadcaster, controlled by the Chinese Communist Party’s propaganda department), and the Beijing municipal government’s investment arm.

34. ByteDance Ltd. wholly owns its subsidiary Defendant TikTok, Ltd., a Cayman Island corporation with its principal place of business in Shanghai, China.

¹³ See Sophie Webster, *ByteDance Changes Names of Subsidiaries to Douyin, Speculated to be Mulling an IPO*, Tech Times (May 8, 2022), <https://www.techtimes.com/articles/275188/20220508/bytedance-changes-names-subsidiaries-douyin-speculated-mulling-ipo.htm>.

¹⁴ See Juro Osawa & Shai Oster, *Beijing Tightens Grip on ByteDance by Quietly Taking Stake, China Board Seat*, The Information (Aug. 16, 2021), <https://www.theinformation.com/articles/beijing-tightens-grip-on-bytedance-by-quietly-taking-stake-china-board-seat?rc=ubpjcg>.

35. TikTok, Ltd. wholly owns its subsidiary Defendant TikTok, LLC which is, and at all relevant times was, a Delaware limited liability company.

36. TikTok, LLC wholly owns its subsidiary Defendant TikTok, Inc. f/k/a Musical.ly, Inc. (“TikTok, Inc.”), a California corporation with its principal place of business in Culver City, CA.

37. Defendants TikTok, Ltd.; TikTok, LLC; TikTok, Inc.; ByteDance Ltd.; and ByteDance Inc. are referred to jointly as “ByteDance.”

38. ByteDance owns, operates, controls, produces, designs, maintains, manages, develops, tests, labels, markets, advertises, promotes, supplies, and distributes the app TikTok. TikTok is widely available to consumers throughout the United States.

D. Google

39. Google Inc. was incorporated in California in September 1998 and reincorporated in Delaware in August 2003. In or around 2017, Google Inc. converted to a Delaware limited liability company, Defendant Google LLC. Google LLC’s principal place of business is in Mountain View, CA.

40. Since 2006, Google LLC has operated, done business as, and wholly owned as its subsidiary Defendant YouTube, LLC. YouTube, LLC is a Delaware limited liability company with its principal place of business in San Bruno, CA. YouTube is widely available to consumers throughout the United States.¹⁵

41. On October 2, 2015, Google reorganized and became a wholly owned subsidiary of a new holding company, Alphabet Inc., a Delaware corporation with its principal place of business in Mountain View, CA.

¹⁵ See, e.g., Alphabet Inc., *Form 10-Q*, Oct. 25, 2022, at 4 (defining Alphabet as “Alphabet Inc. and its subsidiaries.”), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1652044/000165204422000090/goog-20220930.htm>.

42. Google LLC and YouTube, LLC (together, “Google”) are alter egos of one another. Together and in concert they own, operate, control, produce, design, maintain, manage, develop, test, label, market, advertise, promote, supply, and distribute the app YouTube.

JURISDICTION AND VENUE

43. This Court has subject-matter jurisdiction pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1332(a) because the matter in controversy exceeds \$75,000 and is between citizens of different states.

44. This Court has personal jurisdiction over Defendants because Plaintiff’s claims arise out of Defendants’ contacts with this district.

45. Venue is proper in this district pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1391(b)(2) because a substantial part of the events or omissions giving rise to Plaintiff’s claims occurred in this district.

FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS

I. GENERAL FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS APPLICABLE TO ALL DEFENDANTS

A. Defendants have targeted children as a core market.

46. Each Defendant has designed, engineered, marketed, and operated its social media platforms to maximize the number of children who download and use them compulsively. Children are more vulnerable users and have more free time on their hands than their adult counterparts. Because children use Defendants’ services more, they see more ads, and as a result generate more ad revenue for Defendants. Young users also generate a trove of data about their preferences, habits, and behaviors. That information is Defendants’ most valuable commodity. Defendants mine and commodify that data, including by selling to advertisers the ability to reach the population, including children. Each Defendant placed its services into the stream of commerce and generated revenues through the distribution of those apps at the expense of the consuming public.

47. This exploitation of children has become central to Defendants’ profitability. Like the cigarette industry a generation earlier, Defendants understand that a child user today becomes an adult user tomorrow.¹⁶ Indeed, Defendants’ insatiable appetite for growth has created a need for younger and younger users. Defendants’ wrongfully acquired knowledge of their childhood userbase has allowed them to develop services to target elementary school-age children, who are uniquely vulnerable. Like Joe Camel of old, Defendants’ recent attempts to capture pre-adolescent audiences include “kid versions” of apps that are “designed to fuel [kids’] interest in the grown-up version.”¹⁷

48. Recognizing the vulnerability of children under 13, particularly in the Internet age, Congress enacted the Children’s Online Privacy Protection Act (“COPPA”) in 1999.¹⁸ COPPA regulates the conditions under which Defendants can collect, use, or disclose the personal information of children under 13. Under COPPA, developers of apps and websites that are directed to or known to be used by children under 13 cannot lawfully obtain the individually identifiable information of such children without first obtaining verifiable consent from their parents.¹⁹ Even apart from COPPA, it is well established under the law that children lack the legal or mental capacity to make informed decisions about their own well-being.

¹⁶ Haugen_00006240 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] *id.* at Haugen_00006241 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED].

¹⁷ Leonard Sax, *Is TikTok Dangerous for Teens?*, Inst. Fam. Stud. (Mar. 29, 2022), <https://ifstudies.org/blog/is-tiktok-dangerous-for-teens->.

¹⁸ See 15 U.S.C. §§ 6501-6506.

¹⁹ The FTC recently clarified that acceptable methods for obtaining verifiable parent consent include: (a) providing a form for parents to sign and return; (b) requiring the use of a credit/card online payment that provides notification of each transaction; (c) connecting to trained personnel via video conference; (d) calling a staffed toll-free number; (e) asking knowledge-based questions; or (f) verifying a photo-ID from the parent compared to a second photo using facial recognition technology. Federal Trade Commission, *Complying with COPPA: Frequently Asked Questions*, July 2020, <https://www.ftc.gov/business-guidance/resources/complying-coppa-frequently-asked-questions>.

49. COPPA was enacted precisely because Congress recognized that children under age 13 are particularly vulnerable to being taken advantage of by unscrupulous website operators. As a June 1998 report by the FTC observed, “[t]he immediacy and ease with which personal information can be collected from children online, combined with the limited capacity of children to understand fully the potentially serious safety and privacy implications of providing that information, have created deep concerns about current information practices involving children online.”²⁰ The same report observed that children under the age of 13 “generally lack the developmental capacity and judgment to give meaningful consent to the release of personal information to a third party.”²¹

50. Contemporaneous testimony by the Chairman of the FTC observed that the Internet “make[s] it easy for children to disclose personal information to the general public without their parents’ awareness or consent. Such public disclosures raise safety concerns.”²² Further, “the practice of collecting personal identifying information directly from children without parental consent is clearly troubling, since it teaches children to reveal their personal information to strangers and circumvents parental control over their family’s information.”²³

51. None of the Defendants conduct proper age verification or authentication. Instead, each Defendant leaves it to users to self-report their age. This unenforceable and facially inadequate system allows children under 13 to easily create accounts on Defendants’ apps.

²⁰ *Privacy Online: A Report to Congress*, Federal Trade Commission (1998) at 13.

<https://www.ftc.gov/sites/default/files/documents/reports/privacy-online-report-congress/priv-23a.pdf>.

²¹ *Privacy Online: A Report to Congress*, Federal Trade Commission (1998) at 13.

<https://www.ftc.gov/sites/default/files/documents/reports/privacy-online-report-congress/priv-23a.pdf>.

²² S. 2326, Children’s Online Privacy Protection Act of 1998: Hearing Before the U.S. Sen. Subcom. On Communications, Comm. On Commerce, Science, and Transportation, 105th Cong. 11 (1998) (statement of Robert Pitofsky, Chairman, Federal Trade Commission).

²³ S. 2326, Children’s Online Privacy Protection Act of 1998: Hearing Before the U.S. Sen. Subcom. On Communications, Comm. On Commerce, Science, and Transportation, 105th Cong. 11 (1998) (statement of Robert Pitofsky, Chairman, Federal Trade Commission).

52. This is particularly egregious for two reasons. *First*, Defendants have long been on notice of the problem. For instance, in May 2011, Consumer Reports reported the “troubling news” that 7.5 million children under 13 were on Facebook.²⁴ *Second*, given that Defendants have developed and utilized age-estimation algorithms for the purpose of selling user data and targeted advertisements, Defendants could readily use these algorithms to prevent children under 13 from accessing their services, but choose not to do so. Instead, they have turned a blind eye to collecting children’s data in violation of COPPA.

53. Defendants have done this because children are financially lucrative, particularly when they are addicted to Defendants’ apps.

B. Children are uniquely susceptible to harm from Defendants’ apps.

54. Young people are not only Defendants’ most lucrative market, but are also those most vulnerable to harms resulting from Defendants’ services.

55. “Everyone innately responds to social approval.”²⁵ “[B]ut some demographics, in particular teenagers, are more vulnerable to it than others.”²⁶ Unlike adults, who “tend to have a fixed sense of self that relies less on feedback from peers,”²⁷ adolescents are in a “period of personal and social identity formation” that “is now reliant on social media.”²⁸

56. To understand the impact Defendants’ services have on young people, it is helpful to understand some basics about the human brain.

²⁴ Emily Bazelon, *Why Facebook is After Your Kids*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 12, 2011), <https://www.nytimes.com/2011/10/16/magazine/why-facebook-is-after-your-kids.html>.

²⁵ Von Tristan Harris, *The Slot Machine in Your Pocket*, Spiegel Int’l (July 27, 2016), <https://www.spiegel.de/international/zeitgeist/smartphone-addiction-is-part-of-the-design-a-1104237.html>.

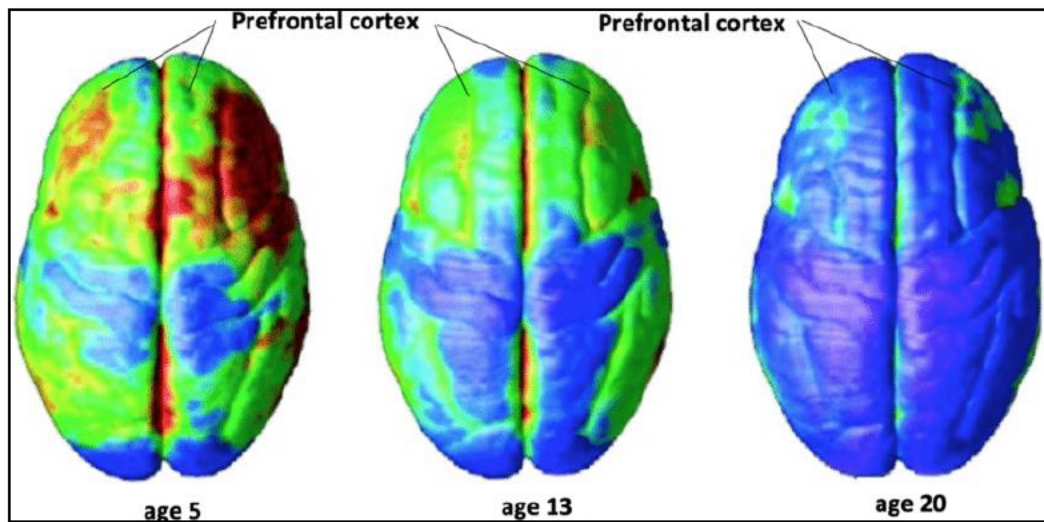
²⁶ Von Tristan Harris, *The Slot Machine in Your Pocket*, Spiegel Int’l (July 27, 2016), <https://www.spiegel.de/international/zeitgeist/smartphone-addiction-is-part-of-the-design-a-1104237.html>.

²⁷ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass’n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

²⁸ Betül Keles et al., *A systematic review: the influence of social media on depression, anxiety and psychological distress in adolescents*, Int’l J. Adolescence & Youth (202) 25:1, 79–93 (Mar. 3, 2019), https://www.researchgate.net/publication/331947590_A_systematic_review_the_influence_of_social_media_on_depression_anxiety_and_psychological_distress_in_adolescents.

57. The frontal lobes of the brain—particularly the prefrontal cortex—control higher-order cognitive functions. This region of the brain is central to planning and executive decision-making, including the evaluation of risk and reward. It also helps inhibit impulsive actions and “regulate emotional responses to social rewards.”²⁹

58. Children and adolescents are especially vulnerable to developing harmful behaviors because their prefrontal cortex is not fully developed.³⁰ Indeed, it is one of the last regions of the brain to mature.³¹ In the images below, the blue color depicts brain development.³²



59. Because of the immaturity of their prefrontal cortex, children have less impulse control, and less ability to regulate their responses to social rewards, than adults.

²⁹ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass’n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

³⁰ Nino Gugushvili et al., *Facebook use intensity and depressive symptoms: a moderated mediation model of problematic Facebook use, age, neuroticism, and extraversion at 3*, BMC Psych. 10, 279 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1186/s40359-022-00990-7>.

³¹ Nino Gugushvili et al., *Facebook use intensity and depressive symptoms: a moderated mediation model of problematic Facebook use, age, neuroticism, and extraversion at 3*, BMC Psych. 10, 279 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1186/s40359-022-00990-7>.

³² Heiner Boettger, & Deborah Koeltzsch, , *The fear factor: Xenoglossophobia or how to overcome the anxiety of speaking foreign languages*, 4, Training Language and Culture, 43-55 (June 2020), https://www.researchgate.net/figure/Development-of-the-cortex-functions-The-PFC_fig1_342501707.

60. Beginning around the age of 10, the brain also begins to change in important ways. Specifically, the receptors for dopamine multiply in the subcortical region of the brain.³³ Dopamine is a neurotransmitter that is central to the brain's reward system.³⁴

61. During this developmental phase, the brain learns to seek out stimuli (e.g., Instagram) that result in a reward (e.g., likes) and cause dopamine to flood the brain's reward pathways. Each time this happens, associations between the stimulus and the reward become stronger.³⁵ Notably, once the brain has learned to make this association, dopaminergic neurons "shift their ... activation from the time of reward delivery to the time of presentation of [a] predictive cue."³⁶ In other words, the anticipation of a reward can itself trigger a dopamine rush.

62. As New York University professor and social psychologist Adam Alter has explained, platform features such as "Likes" give users a dopamine hit similar to drugs and alcohol: "The minute you take a drug, drink alcohol, smoke a cigarette . . . when you get a like on social media, all of those experiences produce dopamine, which is a chemical that's associated with pleasure. When someone likes an Instagram post, or any content that you share, it's a little bit like taking a drug. As far as your brain is concerned, it's a very similar experience."³⁷

63. When the release of dopamine in young brains is manipulated by Defendants' platforms, it interferes with the brain's development and can have long-term impacts on an

³³ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass'n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

³⁴ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass'n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

³⁵ See Bryo Adinoff, *Neurobiologic processes in drug reward and addiction*, 12(6) Harv. Rev. Psychiatry 305-320 (2004), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1920543/>.

³⁶ Luisa Speranza et al., *Dopamine: The Neuromodulator of Long-Term Synaptic Plasticity, Reward and Movement Control*, 10 Cells 735 (2021), <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/33810328/>.

³⁷ Eames Yates, *What happens to your brain when you get a like on Instagram*, Business Insider (Mar. 25, 2017), <https://www.businessinsider.com/what-happens-to-your-brain-like-instagram-dopamine-2017-3>; see also Sören Krach et al., *The rewarding nature of social interactions*, 4(22) Frontiers in Behav. Neuro., (28 May 2010), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC2889690/pdf/fnbeh-04-00022.pdf>; Julian Morgans, *The Secret Ways Social Media Is Built for Addiction*, Vice (May 17, 2017), <https://www.vice.com/en/article/vv5jkb/the-secret-ways-social-media-is-built-for-addiction>.

individual's memory, affective processing, reasoning, planning, attention, inhibitory control, and risk-reward calibration.

64. Given their limited capacity to self-regulate and their vulnerability to peer pressure, children (including teens) are at greater risk of developing a mental disorder from use of Defendants' services.³⁸ Children are more susceptible than adults to feelings of withdrawal when a dopamine hit wears off. Depending on the intensity, delivery, and timing of the stimulus, and the severity of its withdrawal, these feelings can include anxiety, dysphoria, and irritability.³⁹ Children also are more likely to engage in compulsive behaviors to avoid these symptoms, due to their limited capacity for self-regulation, relative lack of impulse control, and struggle to delay gratification.

65. This can lead to a vicious cycle. Repeated spikes of dopamine over time may cause a child to build up a tolerance for the stimulus. In this process of "neuroadaptation," the production of dopamine and the sensitivity of dopamine receptors are both reduced.⁴⁰ As a consequence, the child requires more and more of the stimulus to feel the same reward. Worse, this cycle can cause decreases in activity in the prefrontal cortex, leading to further impairments of decision-making and executive functioning.⁴¹

66. As described further below, each Defendant deliberately designed, engineered, and implemented dangerous features in their apps that present social-reward and other stimuli in a

³⁸ Betul Keles et al., *A systematic review: the influence of social media on depression, anxiety and psychological distress in adolescents*, Int'l J. Adolescence & Youth (202) 25:1, 79–93 (Mar. 3, 2019), https://www.researchgate.net/publication/331947590_A_systematic_review_the_influence_of_social_media_on_depression_anxiety_and_psychological_distress_in_adolescents

³⁹ George Koob, and Nora Volkow. *Neurobiology of addiction: a neurocircuitry analysis*, 3 (8) Lancet Psychiatry 760-773 (2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC6135092/pdf/nihms-985499.pdf>.

⁴⁰ George Koob, and Nora Volkow. *Neurobiology of addiction: a neurocircuitry analysis*, 3 (8) Lancet Psychiatry 760-773 (2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC6135092/pdf/nihms-985499.pdf>.

⁴¹ George Koob & Nora Volkow. *Neurobiology of addiction: a neurocircuitry analysis*, 3 (8) Lancet Psychiatry 760-773 (2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC6135092/pdf/nihms-985499.pdf>.

manner that has caused children to compulsively seek out those stimuli, develop negative symptoms when they were withdrawn, and exhibit reduced impulse control and emotional regulation.

67. In short, children find it particularly difficult to exercise the self-control required to regulate their use of Defendants’ platforms, given the stimuli and rewards embedded in those apps, and as a foreseeable consequence tend to engage in addictive and compulsive use.⁴²

C. Defendants designed their apps to attract and addict youth.

68. Instagram, Facebook, TikTok, Snap, and YouTube employ many similar dangerous service features that are engineered to induce more use by young people—creating an unreasonable risk of compulsive use and addiction.⁴³ For instance, all five apps harvest user data and use this information to generate and push algorithmically tailored “feeds” of photos and videos. And all five include methods through which approval can be expressed and received, such as likes, hearts, comments, shares, or reposts. This section explains the psychological and social mechanisms exploited by these and other similar services.

69. *First*, Defendants’ apps are designed and engineered to methodically, but unpredictably, space out dopamine-triggering rewards with dopamine gaps. The unpredictability is key because, paradoxically, intermittent variable rewards (or “IVR”) create stronger associations (conditioned changes in the neural pathway) than fixed rewards. Services that use this technique are highly addictive or habit forming.

⁴² Fulton Crews et al., *Adolescent cortical development: a critical period of vulnerability for addiction*, 86 *Pharmacology, Biochemistry and Behavior* 189-199 (2007), <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S009130570600400X>.

⁴³ See Kevin Hurler, *For Sites Like Instagram and Twitter, Imitation Is the Only Form of Flattery*, Gizmodo (Aug. 16, 2022), <https://gizmodo.com/instagram-tiktok-snapchat-facebook-meta-1849395419> (“Over the last decade, some of the most popular social media apps have blatantly ripped off features from some of the other most popular social media apps, in a tech version of Capture the Flag where the only losers are the users who are forced to persist through this cat-and-mouse game.”).

70. IVR is based on insights from behavioral science dating back to research in the 1950s by Harvard psychologist B. F. Skinner. Skinner found that laboratory mice respond most voraciously to unpredictable rewards. In one famous experiment, mice that pushed a lever received a variable reward (a small treat, a large treat, or no treat at all). Compared with mice who received the same treat every time, the mice who received only occasional rewards were more likely to exhibit addictive behaviors such as pressing the lever compulsively. This exploitation of neural circuitry is exactly how addictive platforms like slot machines keep users coming back.

71. The IVR aspect of slot machines is limited by the fact that they deliver rewards in a randomized manner, irrespective of the person pulling the lever. By contrast, Defendants' apps are designed to purposely withhold and release rewards on a schedule its algorithms have determined is optimal to heighten a specific user's craving and keep them using the platform. For example, TikTok will at times delay a video it knows a user will like until the moment before it anticipates the user would otherwise log out. Instagram's notification algorithm will at times determine that a particular user's engagement will be maximized if the app withholds "Likes" on their posts and then later delivers them in a large burst of notifications.

72. Defendants' use of IVR is particularly effective on and dangerous for adolescents, given the incomplete aspects of their brain maturation described above—including lack of impulse control and reduced executive functions.

73. There are multiple types of dopamine neurons that are connected with distinct brain networks and have distinct roles in motivational control. Apart from the dopamine reward loop triggered by positive feedback, other dopamine neurons are impacted by salient but non-rewarding stimuli and even painful-aversive stimuli.⁴⁴ Defendants' apps capitalize on this by algorithmically

⁴⁴ J.P.H. Verharen, Yichen Zhu, and Stephan Lammel, *Aversion hot spots in the dopamine system*, 64 *Neurobiology* 46-52 (Mar. 5, 2020), <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.conb.2020.02.002>.

ranking photos and videos that “engage” users because they present a dopamine pay-off, including novel, aversive, and alarming images.

74. *Second*, there are multiple types of dopamine neurons that are connected with distinct brain networks and have distinct roles in motivational control. Apart from the dopamine reward loop triggered by positive feedback, other dopamine neurons are impacted by salient but non-rewarding stimuli and even painful-aversive stimuli.⁴⁵ Defendants’ apps capitalize on this by algorithmically ranking photos and videos that “engage” users because they present a dopamine pay-off, including novel, aversive, and alarming images.

75. *Third*, dangerous features in Defendants’ apps manipulate young users through their exploitation of “reciprocity”—the psychological phenomenon by which people respond to positive or hostile actions in kind. Reciprocity means that people respond in a friendly manner to friendly actions, and with negative retaliation to hostile actions.⁴⁶ Phillip Kunz best illustrated the powerful effect of reciprocity through an experiment using holiday cards. Kunz sent cards to a group of complete strangers, including pictures of his family and a brief note.⁴⁷ People whom he had never met or communicated with before reciprocated, flooding him with holiday cards in return.⁴⁸ Most of the responses did not even ask Mr. Kunz who he was—they simply responded to his initial gesture with a reciprocal action.⁴⁹

⁴⁵ J.P.H. Verharen, Yichen Zhu, and Stephan Lammel, *Aversion hot spots in the dopamine system*, 64 *Neurobiology* 46-52 (Mar. 5, 2020), <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.conb.2020.02.002>.

⁴⁶ Ernst Fehr & Simon Gächter, *Fairness and Retaliation: The Economics of Reciprocity*, 14(3) *J. Econ. Persps.* 159–81 (2000), https://www.researchgate.net/profile/Ernst-Fehr-2/publication/23756527_Fairness_and_Retaliation_The_Economics_of_Reciprocity/links/5eb024e945851592d6b87d3b/Fairness-and-Retaliation-The-Economics-of-Reciprocity.pdf.

⁴⁷ Phillip R. Kunz & Michael Woolcott, *Season’s Greetings: From my status to yours*, 5(3) *Soc. Sci. Rsch.* 269–78 (Sept. 1976), [https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X\(76\)90003-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X(76)90003-X).

⁴⁸ Phillip R. Kunz & Michael Woolcott, *Season’s Greetings: From my status to yours*, 5(3) *Soc. Sci. Rsch.* 269–78 (Sept. 1976), [https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X\(76\)90003-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X(76)90003-X).

⁴⁹ Phillip R. Kunz & Michael Woolcott, *Season’s Greetings: From my status to yours*, 5(3) *Soc. Sci. Rsch.* 269–78 (Sept. 1976), [https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X\(76\)90003-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/0049-089X(76)90003-X).

76. Services like Instagram and Snapchat exploit reciprocity by, for example, automatically telling a sender when their message is seen, instead of letting the recipient avoid disclosing whether it was viewed. Consequently, the recipient feels more obligated to respond immediately, keeping users on the platform.⁵⁰

77. *Fourth*, Defendants’ apps addict young users by preying on their already-heightened need for social comparison and interpersonal feedback-seeking.⁵¹ Because of their relatively undeveloped prefrontal cortex, young people are already predisposed to status anxieties, beauty comparisons, and a desire for social validation.⁵² Defendants’ apps encourage repetitive usage by dramatically amplifying those insecurities.

78. Mitch Prinstein, Chief Science Officer for the American Psychology Association, has explained that online and real-world interactions are fundamentally different.⁵³ For example, in the real world, no public ledger tallies the number of consecutive days friends speak. Similarly, “[a]fter you walk away from a regular conversation, you don’t know if the other person liked it, or if anyone else liked it.”⁵⁴ By contrast, a platform defect like the “Snap Streak” creates exactly such

⁵⁰ Von Tristan Harris, *The Slot Machine in Your Pocket*, Spiegel Int’l (July 27, 2016),

<https://www.spiegel.de/international/zeitgeist/smartphone-addiction-is-part-of-the-design-a-1104237.html>.

⁵¹ Jacqueline Nesi & Mitchell J Prinstein, *Using Social Media for Social Comparison and Feedback-Seeking: Gender and Popularity Moderate Associations with Depressive Symptoms*, 43 J. Abnormal Child Psych. 1427–38 (2015), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5985443/>.

⁵² Susan Harter, *The Construction of the Self: Developmental and Sociocultural Foundations* (Guilford Press, 2d ed., 2012) (explaining how, as adolescents move toward developing cohesive self-identities, they typically engage in greater levels of social comparison and interpersonal feedback-seeking).

⁵³ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass’n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

⁵⁴ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass’n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

artificial forms of feedback.⁵⁵ On Defendants’ apps, friends and even complete strangers can publicly deliver (or withhold) dopamine-laced likes, comments, views, and follows.⁵⁶

79. The “Like” feature common to Defendants’ services has an especially powerful effect on teenagers and can neurologically alter their perception of online posts. Researchers at UCLA used magnetic resonance imaging to study the brains of teenage girls as they used Instagram. They found that girls’ perception of a photo changed depending on the number of likes it had generated.⁵⁷ That an image was highly liked—regardless of its content—instinctively caused the girls to prefer it. As the researchers put it, teens react to perceived “endorsements,” even if likes on social media are often fake, purchased, or manufactured.⁵⁸

80. The use of Defendants’ apps also encourages unhealthy, negative social comparisons, which in turn cause body image issues and related mental and physical disorders. Given adolescents’ naturally vacillating levels of self-esteem, they are already predisposed to comparing “upward” to celebrities, influencers, and peers they perceive as more popular.⁵⁹

⁵⁵ A “Snap Streak” is designed to measure a user’s Snapchat activity with another user. Two users achieve a “Snap Streak” when they exchange at least one Snap in three consecutive 24-hour periods. When successively longer “Streaks” are achieved, users are rewarded with varying tiers of emojis.

⁵⁶ Zara Abrams, *Why young brains are especially vulnerable to social media*, Am. Psych. Ass’n (Aug. 25, 2022), <https://www.apa.org/news/apa/2022/social-media-children-teens>.

⁵⁷ Lauren E. Sherman et al., *The Power of the Like in Adolescence: Effects of Peer Influence on Neural and Behavioral Responses to Social Media*, 27(7) Psychol Sci. 1027 (2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5387999/>

⁵⁸ Lauren E. Sherman et al., *The Power of the Like in Adolescence: Effects of Peer Influence on Neural and Behavioral Responses to Social Media*, 27(7) Psychol Sci. 1027 (2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5387999/>; see also Stuart Wolpert, *The teenage brain on social media*, UCLA Newsroom (May 31, 2016), <https://newsroom.ucla.edu/releases/the-teenage-brain-on-social-media>.

⁵⁹ Jacqueline Nesi & Mitchell J Prinstein, *Using Social Media for Social Comparison and Feedback-Seeking: Gender and Popularity Moderate Associations with Depressive Symptoms*, 43 J. Abnormal Child Psych. 1427–38 (2015), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5985443/> (“Upward comparison occurs when people compare themselves to someone they perceive to be superior[], whereas a downward comparison is defined by making a comparison with someone perceived to be inferior[.]”); Jin-Liang wang, Hai-Zhen Wang, James Gaskin, & Skyler Hawk, *The Mediating Roles of Upward Social Comparison and Self-esteem and the Moderating Role of Social Comparison Orientation in the Association between Social Networking Site Usage and Subjective Well-Being*, Frontiers in Psychology (May 2017), [https://www.frontiersin.org/articles/10.3389/fpsyg.2017.00771/full#:~:text=Social%20comparison%20can%20be%20upward,inferior%20\(Wills%2C%201981\).](https://www.frontiersin.org/articles/10.3389/fpsyg.2017.00771/full#:~:text=Social%20comparison%20can%20be%20upward,inferior%20(Wills%2C%201981).)

Defendants’ apps turbocharge this phenomenon. On Defendants’ apps, users disproportionately post “idealized” content,⁶⁰ misrepresenting their lives. That is made worse by appearance-altering filters built into Defendants’ apps, which underscore conventional (and often racially biased) standards of beauty, by allowing users to remove blemishes, make bodies and faces appear thinner, and lighten skin-tone. Defendants’ apps provide a continuous stream of these filtered and fake appearances and experiences.⁶¹ That encourages harmful body image comparisons by adolescents, who begin to negatively perceive their own appearance and believe their bodies, and indeed their lives, are comparatively worse.⁶²

81. *Fifth*, Defendants’ respective service features work in combination to create and maintain a user’s “flow-state”: a hyper-focused, hypnotic state, where bodily movements are reflexive and the user is totally immersed in smoothly rotating through aspects of the social media service.⁶³

82. As discussed in more detail below, dangerous features like the ones just described can cause or contribute to the following injuries in young people: eating and feeding disorders; depressive disorders; anxiety disorders; sleep disorders; trauma- and stressor-related disorders;

⁶⁰ Jacqueline Nesi & Mitchell J Prinstein, *Using Social Media for Social Comparison and Feedback-Seeking: Gender and Popularity Moderate Associations with Depressive Symptoms*, 43 J. Abnormal Child Psych. 1427–38 (2015), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5985443/>;

⁶¹ Jin Kyun Lee, *The Effects of Social Comparison Orientation on Psychological Well-Being in Social Networking Sites: Serial Mediation of Perceived Social Support and Self-Esteem*, Current Psychology (2020), <https://link.springer.com/content/pdf/10.1007/s12144-020-01114-3.pdf>.

⁶² Jin Kyun Lee, *The Effects of Social Comparison Orientation on Psychological Well-Being in Social Networking Sites: Serial Mediation of Perceived Social Support and Self-Esteem*, Current Psychology (2020), <https://link.springer.com/content/pdf/10.1007/s12144-020-01114-3.pdf>; see also Nino Gugushvili et al., *Facebook use intensity and depressive symptoms: a moderated mediation model of problematic Facebook use, age, neuroticism, and extraversion at 3*, BMC Psych. 10, 279 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1186/s40359-022-00990-7> (explaining that youth are particularly vulnerable because they “use social networking sites for construing their identity, developing a sense of belonging, and for comparison with others”); Jin Lee, *The effects of social comparison orientation on psychological well-being in social networking sites: serial mediation of perceived social support and self-esteem*, 41 Current Psychology 6247–6259 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1007/s12144-020-01114-3>.

⁶³ See e.g., *What Makes TikTok so Addictive?: An Analysis of the Mechanisms Underlying the World’s Latest Social Media Craze*, Brown Undergraduate J. of Pub. Health (2021), <https://sites.brown.edu/publichealthjournal/2021/12/13/tiktok/> (describing how IVR and infinite scrolling may induce a flow state in users).

obsessive-compulsive and related disorders; disruptive, impulse-control, and conduct disorders; suicidal ideation; self-harm; and suicide.⁶⁴

D. Millions of kids use Defendants’ services compulsively.

83. Defendants have been staggeringly successful in their efforts to attract young users to their apps. In 2021, 32% of 7- to 9-year-olds,⁶⁵ 49% of 10- to 12-year-olds,⁶⁶ and 90% of 13- to 17-year-olds in the United States used social media.⁶⁷ A majority of U.S. teens use Instagram, TikTok, Snapchat, and/or YouTube. Thirty-two percent say they “wouldn’t want to live without” YouTube, while 20% said the same about Snapchat, and 13% said the same about both TikTok and Instagram.⁶⁸

84. U.S. teenagers who use Defendants’ services are likely to use them every day. Sixty-two percent of U.S. children ages 13-18 use social media daily.⁶⁹ And daily use often means constant use. About one-in-five U.S. teens visit or use YouTube “almost constantly,” while about one-in-six report comparable usage of Instagram.⁷⁰ Nearly half of U.S. teens use TikTok at least

⁶⁴ E.g., Nino Gugushvili et al., *Facebook use intensity and depressive symptoms: a moderated mediation model of problematic Facebook use, age, neuroticism, and extraversion at 3*, BMC Psych. 10, 279 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1186/s40359-022-00990-7> (collecting sources).

⁶⁵ *Sharing Too Soon? Children and Social Media Apps*, C.S. Mott Child’s Hosp. Univ. Mich. Health (Oct. 18, 2021), https://mottpoll.org/sites/default/files/documents/101821_SocialMedia.pdf.

⁶⁶ *Sharing Too Soon? Children and Social Media Apps*, C.S. Mott Child’s Hosp. Univ. Mich. Health (Oct. 18, 2021), https://mottpoll.org/sites/default/files/documents/101821_SocialMedia.pdf.

⁶⁷ *Social Media and Teens*, Am. Acad. Child & Adolescent Psychiatry (Mar. 2018), https://www.aacap.org/AACAP/Families_and_Youth/Facts_for_Families/FFF-Guide/Social-Media-and-Teens-100.aspx; see also Victoria Rideout et al., *The Common Sense Census: Media Use by Tweens and Teens*, 2021 at 5, Common Sense Media (2022), https://www.common sense media.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

⁶⁸ Victoria Rideout et al., *Common Sense Census: Media use by tweens and teens*, 2021 at 31, Common Sense Media (2022), https://www.common sense media.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

⁶⁹ Victoria Rideout et al., *Common Sense Census: Media use by tweens and teens*, 2021 at 31, Common Sense Media (2022), https://www.common sense media.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

⁷⁰ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

“several times a day.”⁷¹ In one study, U.S. teenage users reported checking Snapchat thirty times a day on average.⁷²

85. Teenagers know they are addicted to Defendants’ services: 36% admit they spend too much time on social media.⁷³ Yet they can’t stop. Of the teens who use at least one social media platform “almost constantly,” 71% say quitting would be hard. Nearly one-third of this population—and nearly one-in-five of *all* teens—say quitting would be “very hard.”⁷⁴

86. Notably, the more teens use Defendants’ apps, the harder it is to quit. Teens who say they spend too much time on social media are almost twice as likely to say that giving up social media would be hard, compared to teens who see their social media usage as about right.⁷⁵

87. Despite using social media frequently, most young people don’t particularly enjoy it. In 2021, only 27% of boys and 42% of girls ages 8-18 reported liking social media “a lot.”⁷⁶ Moreover, one survey found that young people think social media is the main reason youth mental health is getting worse.⁷⁷ About twice as many of the surveyed youth believed that social media is the main reason for declining mental health than the next likely cause, and over *seven times* more believed it to be the main cause rather than drugs and alcohol.⁷⁸

⁷¹ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁷² Erinn Murphy et al., *Taking Stock with Teens, Fall 2021* at 13, Piper Sandler (2021), <https://tinyurl.com/89ct4p88>; see also Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁷³ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁷⁴ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁷⁵ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁷⁶ Victoria Rideout et al., *Common Sense Census: Media use by tweens and teens, 2021* at 34, Common Sense Media (2022), https://www.commonsensemedia.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

⁷⁷ *Headspace (2018) National youth mental health survey 2018*, National Youth Mental Health Foundation (2018), <https://headspace.org.au/assets/headspace-National-Youth-Mental-Health-Survey-2018.pdf>

⁷⁸ *Headspace National Youth Mental Health Survey 2018*, National Youth Mental Health Foundation (2018), <https://headspace.org.au/assets/headspace-National-Youth-Mental-Health-Survey-2018.pdf> (surveying more than 4,000 Australians ages 12-25).

E. Defendants’ apps have created a youth mental health crisis.

88. Nearly a decade of scientific and medical studies demonstrate that dangerous features engineered into Defendants’ platforms—particularly when used multiple hours a day—can have a “detrimental effect on the psychological health of [their] users,” including compulsive use, addiction, body dissatisfaction, anxiety, depression, and self-harming behaviors such as eating disorders.⁷⁹

89. Addiction and compulsive use of Defendants’ services can entail a variety of behavioral problems including but not limited to: (1) a lessening of control, (2) persistent, compulsive seeking out of access to the services, (3) using the service more, and for longer, than intended, (4) trying to cut down on use but being unable to do so, (5) experiencing intense cravings or urges to use, (6) tolerance (needing more of the services to achieve the same desired effect), (7) developing withdrawal symptoms when not using the service, or when the service is taken away, (8) neglecting responsibilities at home, work, or school because of the intensity of usage, (9) continuing to use the service even when doing so interferes and causes problems with important family and social relationships, (10) giving up important or desirable social and recreational activities due to use, and (11) continuing to use despite the service causing significant harm to the user’s physical and mental health.

90. Many of these injuries can be long-lasting, if not lifelong. For example, the long-term effects of eating disorders can include: (1) dermatological effects to the nails and hair; (2) gastrointestinal illnesses, such as gastroparesis or hypomotility of the colon; (3) impacts to the

⁷⁹ See, e.g., Fazida Karim *et al.*, *Social Media Use and Its Connection to Mental Health: A Systemic Review*, Cureus Volume 12(6) (June 15, 2020), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC7364393/>; Alexandra R. Lonergan *et al.*, *Protect me from my selfie: Examining the association between photo-based social media behaviors and self-reported eating disorders in adolescence*, *Int. J. of Eating Disorders* 756 (Apr. 7, 2020), <https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/epdf/10.1002/eat.23256>.

endocrine system, such as glycolic or metabolic conditions, bone loss, and hormonal conditions; (4) nervous system effects, such as gray matter brain loss or atrophy; (5) skeletal system effects, such as bone loss; (6) cardiovascular effects, such as structural heart damage, mitral valve prolapse, or fluid around the heart; and (7) fertility issues.⁸⁰

91. Each Defendant has long been aware of this research, but chose to ignore or brush it off.⁸¹ For example, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁸² Yet, as discussed at length below, Defendants conducted some of the research themselves—and then hid their unfavorable findings from the public.⁸³

92. Scientists have studied the impacts of the overuse of social media since at least 2008, with social media addiction recognized in literature around that time after a pervasive upsurge in Facebook use.⁸⁴ The *Bergen Social Media Addiction Scale* assesses social media addiction along six core elements: 1) salience (preoccupation with the activity), 2) mood modification (the behavior alters the emotional state), 3) tolerance (increasing activity is needed for the same mood-altering effects), 4) withdrawal (physical or psychological discomfort when the

⁸⁰ See, e.g., Anorexia Nervosa, Cleveland Clinic <https://my.clevelandclinic.org/health/diseases/9794-anorexia-nervosa#outlook--prognosis>; Bulimia Nervosa; Cleveland Clinic <https://my.clevelandclinic.org/health/diseases/9795-bulimia-nervosa#symptoms-and-causes>.

⁸¹ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED] META3047MDL-003-00089107 at
META3047MDL-003-000891078. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] See META3047MDL-003-00082165 at META3047MDL-
003-00082165 [REDACTED].

⁸² META3047MDL-003-00082165.

⁸³ See, e.g., Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016381 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016414 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00005458 at Haugen_00005500 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

⁸⁴ Tim Davies & Pete Cranston, *Youth Work and Social Networking: Interim Report*, The National Youth Agency (May 2008), https://www.researchgate.net/publication/233911484_Youth_Work_and_Social_Networking_Final_Research_Report.

behavior is discontinued), 5) conflict (ceasing other activities or social interaction to perform the behavior), and 6) relapse (resuming the behavior after attempting to control or discontinue it).⁸⁵

93. Beginning in at least 2014, researchers began demonstrating that addictive and compulsive use of Defendants' apps leads to negative mental and physical outcomes for kids.

94. In 2014, a study of 10- to 12-year-old girls found that increased use of Facebook was linked with body image concerns, the idealization of thinness, and increased dieting.⁸⁶ (This study was sent to Mark Zuckerberg in 2018, in a letter signed by 118 public health advocates.)⁸⁷

95. In 2016, a study demonstrated that young people who frequently use Defendants' apps are more likely to suffer sleep disturbances than their peers who use them infrequently.⁸⁸ Defendants' service, driven by IVR algorithms, deprive users of sleep by sending push notifications and emails at night, prompting children to re-engage with the apps when they should be sleeping. Disturbed and insufficient sleep is associated with poor health outcomes,⁸⁹ including increased risk of major depression—by a factor of more than three—⁹⁰and future suicidal behavior in adolescents.⁹¹ The American Academy of Sleep Medicine has recommended that, in a 24-hour

⁸⁵ Cecilie Andreassen et al., *The relationship between addictive use of social media and video games and symptoms of psychiatric disorders: a large-scale cross-sectional study*, 30(2) Psychol. of Addictive Behav., 252-262 (2016), <http://dx.doi.org/10.1037/adb0000160>.

⁸⁶ Marika Tiggemann & Amy Slater, *NetTweens: The Internet and body image concerns in preteenage girls*, 34(5), J. Early Adolesc. 606-620 (June 2014), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/epub/10.1177/0272431613501083>.

⁸⁷ Campaign for a Commercial-Free Childhood, *Letter to Mark Zuckerberg Re: Facebook Messenger Kids* (Jan. 30, 2018), <https://fairplayforkids.org/wp-content/uploads/archive/devel-generate/gaw/FBMessengerKids.pdf>.

⁸⁸ Jessica C. Levenson et al., *The Association Between Social Media Use and Sleep Disturbance Among Young Adults*, 85 Preventive Med. 36-41 (Apr. 2016), <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/abs/pii/S0091743516000025>.

⁸⁹ Jessica C. Levenson et al., *The Association Between Social Media Use and Sleep Disturbance Among Young Adults*, 85 Preventive Med. 36-41 (Apr. 2016), <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/abs/pii/S0091743516000025>; National Institute of Mental Health. 2016. The teen brain: 6 things to know, <https://www.nimh.nih.gov/health/publications/the-teen-brain-still-under-construction/index.shtml>; R. Sather & A. Shelat, *Understanding the teen brain*, <https://www.urmc.rochester.edu/encyclopedia/content.aspx?ContentTypeID=1&ContentID=3051>.

⁹⁰ E. Roberts & H Doung, *The Prospective Association between Sleep Deprivation and Depression among Adolescents* Sleep, Volume 37, Issue 2, 1 Feb. 2014.

⁹¹ X. Liu, D. Buysse, *Sleep and youth suicidal behavior: a neglected field*, Current Opinion in Psychiatry (May 2006).

period, children aged 6–12 years should regularly sleep 9–12 hours and teenagers aged 13–18 years should sleep 8–10 hours.⁹²

96. In another 2016 study, 52% of girls said they use image filters every day, and 80% reported using an app to change their appearance before the age of 13.⁹³ In fact, 77% of girls reported trying to change or hide at least one part of their body before posting a photo of themselves, and 50% believe they did not look good enough without editing.⁹⁴

97. In 2017, British researchers asked 1,500 teens to rate how Instagram, Snapchat, and YouTube affected them on certain well-being measures, including anxiety, loneliness, body image, and sleep.⁹⁵ Teens rated all three platforms as having a negative impact on body image, “FOMO” (fear of missing out), and sleep. Teens also noted that Instagram and Snapchat had a negative impact on anxiety, depression, and loneliness.

98. In 2018, a *Journal of Social and Clinical Psychology* study examined a group of college students whose use of Instagram, Facebook, and Snapchat was limited to 10 minutes per day per platform. The study found that this limited-use group showed “significant reductions in loneliness and depression over three weeks” compared to a control group that used social media as usual.⁹⁶

⁹² S. Paruthi, L. Brooks, C. D’Ambrosio, et al, *Consensus statement of the American Academy of Sleep Medicine on the recommended amount of sleep for healthy children: methodology and discussion*, 12 J Clin Sleep Med 1549–61 (2016).

⁹³ Anna Haines, *From “Instagram Face” to “Snapchat Dysmorphia”: How Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c32eb144eff>.

⁹⁴ Anna Haines, *From “Instagram Face” to “Snapchat Dysmorphia”: How Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c32eb144eff>.

⁹⁵ Royal Society for Public Health, *#StatusOfMind*, <https://www.rsph.org.uk/static/uploaded/d125b27c-0b62-41c5-a2c0155a8887cd01.pdf>; see also Jonathan Haidt, *The Dangerous Experiment on Teen Girls*, The Atlantic (Nov. 21, 2021), <https://www.theatlantic.com/ideas/archive/2021/11/facebooks-dangerous-experiment-teen-girls/620767/>.

⁹⁶ Melissa G. Hunt et al., *No More FOMO: Limiting Social Media Decreases Loneliness and Depression*, 37 J. of Social & Clinical Psych. (Dec. 5, 2018), <https://guilfordjournals.com/doi/epdf/10.1521/jscp.2018.37.10.751>.

99. In 2018, a systematic literature review of nine studies published in the *Indian Journal of Psychiatry* concluded that dangerous features in social networking platforms “contribute to increased exposure to and engagement in self-harm behavior, as users tend to emulate self-injurious behavior of others online, adopt self-injurious practices from self-harm videos, or are encouraged and acclaimed by others, thus normalizing self-injurious thoughts and behavior.”⁹⁷

100. A 2019 survey of American adolescents ages 12-14 found that a user’s displeasure with their body could be predicted based on their frequency of using social media (including Instagram and Facebook) and based on the extent to which they engaged in behaviors that adopt an observer’s point-of-view (such as taking selfies or asking others to “rate one’s looks”). This effect was more pronounced among girls than boys.⁹⁸

101. A third study in 2019 of more than 6500 American adolescents ranging in age from 12 to 15 years old found that those who used social media for 3 hours or more per day were more likely to suffer from mental health problems such as anxiety and depression.⁹⁹ Notably, this association remained significant even *after* adjusting for demographics, past alcohol and marijuana use, and history of mental health problems.¹⁰⁰

102. In 2020, a study of Australian adolescents found that investment in others’ selfies (through likes and comments) was associated with greater odds of meeting criteria for

⁹⁷ Aksha Memon et al., *The role of online social networking on deliberate self-harm and suicidality in adolescents: a systematized review of literature*, 60(4) *Indian J Psychiatry* 384-392 (Oct-Dec 2018), <http://10.4103/psychiatry.IndianJPsychiatry.414.17>.

⁹⁸ Ilyssa Salomon & Christia Spears Brown, *The Selfie Generation: Examining the Relationship Between Social Media Use and Early Adolescent Body Image*, *Journal of Early Adolescence* (Apr. 21, 2018), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/10.1177/0272431618770809>.

⁹⁹ Kira Riehm et al., *Associations between time spent using social media and internalizing and externalizing problems among US youth*, 76(12) *JAMA Psychiatry* (2019), <https://jamanetwork.com/journals/jamapsychiatry/fullarticle/2749480>.

¹⁰⁰ Kira Riehm et al., *Associations between time spent using social media and internalizing and externalizing problems among US youth*, 76(12) *JAMA Psychiatry* (2019), <https://jamanetwork.com/journals/jamapsychiatry/fullarticle/2749480>.

clinical/subclinical bulimia nervosa, clinical/subclinical binge-eating disorder, night eating syndrome, and unspecified feeding and eating disorders.¹⁰¹

103. In 2020, a longitudinal study investigated whether “Facebook Addiction Disorder” predicted suicide-related outcomes, and found that children and adolescents addicted to Facebook are more likely to engage in self-injurious behavior, such as cutting and suicide.¹⁰²

104. In 2020, clinical research demonstrated an observable link between youth social media use and disordered eating behavior.¹⁰³ The more time young girls spend using Defendants’ platforms, the more likely they are to develop disordered eating behaviors.¹⁰⁴ And the more social media accounts adolescents have, the more disordered eating behaviors they exhibit.¹⁰⁵

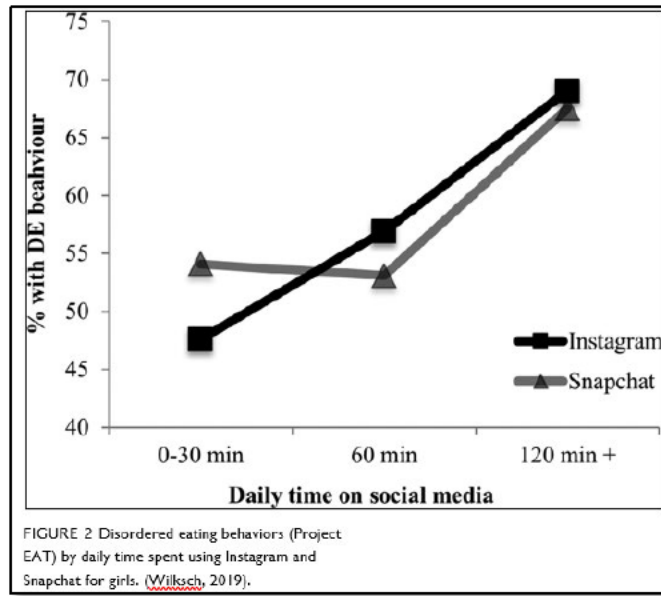
¹⁰¹ Alexandra R. Lonergan et al., *Protect Me from My Selfie: Examining the Association Between Photo-Based Social Media Behaviors and Self-Reported Eating Disorders in Adolescence*, Int’l J. of Eating Disorders (Apr. 7, 2020), <https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/epdf/10.1002/eat.23256>.

¹⁰² See, e.g., Julia Brailovskaia et al., *Positive mental health mediates the relationship between Facebook addiction disorder and suicide-related outcomes: a longitudinal approach*, 00(00) *Cyberpsychology, Behavior, and Social Networking* (2020), <https://doi.org/10.1089/cyber.2019.0563>; Jean M. Twenge et al., *Increases in Depressive Symptoms, Suicide-Related Outcomes, and Suicide Rates Among U.S. Adolescents After 2010 and Links to Increased New Media Screen Time*, 6 *Clinical Psych. Sci.* 3–17 (2018).

¹⁰³ Simon M. Wilksch et al., *The relationship between social media use and disordered eating in young adolescents*, 53 Int’l J. Eating Disorders 96–106 (2020), <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/31797420/>.

¹⁰⁴ Simon M. Wilksch et al., *The relationship between social media use and disordered eating in young adolescents*, 53 Int’l J. Eating Disorders 96–106 (2020), <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/31797420/>.

¹⁰⁵ Simon M. Wilksch et al., *The relationship between social media use and disordered eating in young adolescents*, 53 Int’l J. Eating Disorders 96–106 (2020), <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/31797420/>.



105. Eating disorders often occur simultaneously with other self-harm behaviors such as cutting and are often associated with suicide.¹⁰⁶

106. In a 2021 study, female undergraduates were randomly shown thinspiration (low body mass index and not muscular), fitspiration (muscular and exercising), or neutral photos.¹⁰⁷ Thinspiration and fitspiration images lowered self-esteem, even in those with a self-perceived healthy weight.¹⁰⁸

107. A 2022 study of Italian adolescent girls (12-17) and young women (18-28) found that Instagram's image editing and browsing features, combined with an emphasis on influencer interactions, promulgated unattainable body ideals that caused users to compare their bodies to

¹⁰⁶ Sonja Swanson et al., *Prevalence and correlates of eating disorders in adolescents*, 68(7) Arch Gen Psychiatry 717-723 (2011), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5546800/>.

¹⁰⁷ Karikarn Chansiri & Thipkanok Wongphothiphan, *The indirect effects of Instagram images on women's self-esteem: The moderating roles of BMI and perceived weight*, 00(0) New Media & Society 1-23 (2021), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/epub/10.1177/14614448211029975>.

¹⁰⁸ Karikarn Chansiri & Thipkanok Wongphothiphan, *The indirect effects of Instagram images on women's self-esteem: The moderating roles of BMI and perceived weight*, 00(0) New Media & Society 1-23 (2021), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/epub/10.1177/14614448211029975>.

those ideals.¹⁰⁹ These trends were more prominent among adolescent girls, given their higher susceptibility to social pressures related to their bodies and given the physical changes associated with puberty.

108. In 2023, a study of magnetic resonance images demonstrated that compulsive use of Defendants' apps measurably alters children's brains.¹¹⁰ This study measured fMRI responses in 12-year-old adolescents who used Facebook, Instagram, and Snapchat over a three-year period and found that neural patterns diverged. Specifically, those who engaged in high social media checking behavior "showed lower neural sensitivity to social anticipation" than those who engaged in low to moderate checking behavior.¹¹¹

109. Defendants' services have triggered depression, anxiety, eating disorders, self-harm, and suicidality among thousands of children. Defendants have created nothing short of a national crisis.

110. From 2009 to 2019, the rate of high school students who reported persistent sadness or hopelessness increased by 40% (to one out of every three kids).¹¹² The share of kids who seriously considered suicide increased by 36%, and those that created a suicide plan increased by 44%.¹¹³

¹⁰⁹ Federica Pedalino and Anne-Linda Camerini, *Instagram use and body dissatisfaction: The mediating role of upward social comparison with peers and influencers among young females*, 19(3) Int'l J of Environmental Research and Public Health 1543 (2022), <https://www.mdpi.com/1660-4601/19/3/1543>.

¹¹⁰ Maria Maza et al., *Association of habitual checking behaviors on social media with longitudinal functional brain development*, JAMA Ped., (Jan. 3, 2023), <https://jamanetwork.com/journals/jamapediatrics/article-abstract/2799812>.

¹¹¹ Maria Maza et al., *Association of habitual checking behaviors on social media with longitudinal functional brain development*, JAMA Ped., (Jan. 3, 2023), <https://jamanetwork.com/journals/jamapediatrics/article-abstract/2799812>.

¹¹² *Protecting Youth Mental Health: The U.S. Surgeon General's Advisory* at 8, U.S. Dep't Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 7, 2021), <https://www.hhs.gov/sites/default/files/surgeon-general-youth-mental-health-advisory.pdf>.

¹¹³ *Protecting Youth Mental Health: The U.S. Surgeon General's Advisory* at 8, U.S. Dep't Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 7, 2021), <https://www.hhs.gov/sites/default/files/surgeon-general-youth-mental-health-advisory.pdf>.

111. From 2007 to 2019, suicide rates among youth aged 10-24 in the United States increased by 57%.¹¹⁴

112. From 2007 to 2016, emergency room visits for youth aged 5-17 rose 117% for anxiety disorders, 44% for mood disorders, and 40% for attention disorders.¹¹⁵

113. By 2019, one-in-five children aged 3-17 in the United States had a mental, emotional, developmental, or behavioral disorder.¹¹⁶ Mental health issues are particularly acute among females.¹¹⁷

114. On December 7, 2021, the United States Surgeon General issued an advisory on the youth mental health crisis.¹¹⁸ The Surgeon General explained, “[m]ental health challenges in children, adolescents, and young adults are real and widespread. Even before the pandemic, an alarming number of young people struggled with feelings of helplessness, depression, and thoughts of suicide—and rates have increased over the past decade.”¹¹⁹ Those “mental health challenges were the leading cause of disability and poor life outcomes in young people.”¹²⁰

¹¹⁴ *Protecting Youth Mental Health: The U.S. Surgeon General’s Advisory* at 8, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 7, 2021), <https://www.hhs.gov/sites/default/files/surgeon-general-youth-mental-health-advisory.pdf>.

¹¹⁵ Charmaine Lo, *Children’s mental health emergency department visits: 2007-2016*, 145(6) *Pediatrics* e20191536 (June 2020), <https://doi.org/10.1542/peds.2019-1536>.

¹¹⁶ *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic*, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 14, 2021), <https://adasoutheast.org/u-s-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic/>; see also Jean M. Twenge et al., *Increases in Depressive Symptoms, Suicide-Related Outcomes, and Suicide Rates Among U.S. Adolescents After 2010 and Links to Increased New Media Screen Time*, 6 *Clinical Psych. Sci.* 3–17 (2017), <https://doi.org/10.1177/216770261772337> (noting that mental health issues are particularly acute among females).

¹¹⁷ *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic*, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 14, 2021), <https://adasoutheast.org/u-s-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic/>.

¹¹⁸ *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic*, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 14, 2021), <https://adasoutheast.org/u-s-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic/>.

¹¹⁹ *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic*, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 14, 2021), <https://adasoutheast.org/u-s-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic/>.

¹²⁰ *U.S. Surgeon General Issues Advisory on Youth Mental Health Crisis Further Exposed by COVID-19 Pandemic*, U.S. Dep’t Health & Hum. Servs. (Dec. 14, 2021), <https://adasoutheast.org/u-s-surgeon-general-issues-advisory-on-youth-mental-health-crisis-further-exposed-by-covid-19-pandemic/>.

115. On February 13, 2023, the CDC released new statistics revealing that, in 2021, one in three girls seriously considered attempting suicide.¹²¹

116. As discussed herein, each of the Defendants' platforms manipulates minor users' brains by building in stimuli and social reward mechanisms (e.g., "Likes") that cause users to compulsively seek social rewards. That, in turn, leads to neuroadaptation; a child requires more and more stimuli to obtain the desired dopamine release, along with further impairments of decision-making. It also leads to reward-seeking through increasingly extreme content, which is more likely to generate intense reactions from other users. These consequences are the foreseeable results of Defendants' engineering decisions.

F. Defendants' dangerous social media platforms encourage dangerous "challenges."

117. Dangerous "viral" challenges are one particularly pernicious result of the dangerous services provided by Defendants' apps. "Online challenges or dares typically involve people recording themselves doing something difficult, which they share online to encourage others to repeat."¹²² These challenges often generate significant engagement—sometimes millions of likes or views—and resulting social rewards to the users who post videos of themselves carrying out the challenges. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹²³ Predictably, a substantial portion of online challenges—created for the purpose of generating social rewards—are very dangerous.

¹²¹ Azeen Ghorayashi & Roni Caryn Rabin, *Teen Girls Report Record Levels of Sadness, C.D.C. Finds*, N.Y. Times (Feb. 13, 2023), <https://www.nytimes.com/2023/02/13/health/teen-girls-sadness-suicide-violence.html>.

¹²² TikTok, *Online Challenges*, <https://www.tiktok.com/safety/en-us/online-challenges/>.

¹²³ TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00002975. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]. TikTok3047MDL-001-00002375.

118. For example, one common social media challenge is the “Blackout Challenge,” where youth are encouraged to make themselves faint by holding their breath and constricting their chest muscles, or by restricting airflow with a ligature around their neck. This challenge is dangerous because, should the participant fail to remove the ligature around their neck prior to fainting, they may strangle themselves. Similarly, an “I Killed Myself” challenge involves participants faking their own deaths to record their family members’ reactions upon believing their loved one has died. This challenge is dangerous because certain methods of participating can actually kill (or inflict catastrophic injury) on participants. Likewise, the game Russian Roulette—in which a participant loads a revolver with a single bullet, spins the chamber until it falls on a random slot, and then shoots themselves—has taken on new life as a social media challenge.

119. Again, these injuries and deaths are a foreseeable consequence of Defendants’ addictive services. Many other addictive services cause injury or death because neuroadaptation causes addicts to use increasingly extreme methods to maintain dopamine levels. That compulsive use of social media would do the same was, at all relevant times, foreseeable, particularly as to young users whose abilities to assess risks, make wise decisions, and regulate their responses to perceived social needs are still developing.

120. Defendants are perfectly aware of the foreseeable risks to youth presented by their apps’ “viral” promotion of dangerous challenges. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹²⁴

121. Defendants have encouraged the viral challenge phenomenon in spite of the fact that their encouragement furthers dangerous challenges themselves and a broader ecosystem in which those dangerous challenges occur.

122. Meta, TikTok, and YouTube use engagement-optimized algorithms to control users' main feeds. Such algorithms spread extreme content as a consequence of its propensity to generate engagement. This foreseeably leads to dangerous challenges spreading easily on these Defendants' platforms. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹²⁵

123. Defendants have further encouraged challenges in other ways. ByteDance regularly creates overlays and filters that facilitate viral challenges. It offers advertisers the ability to launch Branded Hashtag Challenges and promotes them on user feeds.¹²⁶ It boasts that challenges are “geared towards building awareness and engagement,” and that “research shows that they can deliver strong results”—i.e., increased return on ad spending—“at every stage of the funnel.” This, in turn, generates advertising revenue for ByteDance. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹²⁷

124. Snap also promotes viral challenges through Snapchat's Snap Spotlight feature. It gives cash prizes to challenge participants whose challenges receive the most views on Snap

¹²⁴ TikTok3047MDL-001-00002375.

¹²⁵ META3047MDL-003-00030070.

¹²⁶ TikTok for Business, *Branded Hashtag Challenge: Harness the Power of Participation* (Mar. 16, 2022), <https://www.tiktok.com/business/en-US/blog/branded-hashtag-challenge-harness-the-power-of-participation>.

¹²⁷ TikTok3047MDL-001-00000177.

Spotlight.¹²⁸ It has also created overlays that encourage challenges—such as a Speed Filter, showing how fast a given user was going at the time they took a particular Snap.¹²⁹ Other Defendants have also promoted viral challenges based on a recognition that such challenges drive engagement and advertising revenue.

G. Defendants’ dangerous social media apps facilitate and contribute to the sexual exploitation and sextortion of children, and the ongoing production and spread of child sex abuse material online.

125. It is well documented that sexual predators use Defendants’ platforms to target and exploit minors. They are drawn to social media because it provides them with easy access to a large pool of potential victims, many of whom are addicted to Defendants’ platforms. On February 7, 2023, for example, the FBI and international law enforcement agencies issued a joint warning about the global “financial sextortion crisis” which stated: “Financial sextortion can happen anywhere, although it mainly occurs on the digital platforms where children are already spending their screen time, like social media and gaming websites, or video chat applications. On these platforms, predators often pose as girls of a similar age and use fake accounts to target young boys, deceiving them into sending explicit photos or videos. The predator then threatens to release the compromising materials unless the victim sends payment, however, in many cases, the predator will release the images anyway.”¹³⁰

126. Rather than mitigate the risk of sexual exploitation and harm to children and teens on their services, Defendants have facilitated and exacerbated it by implementing dangerous platform features that help sexual predators connect with children. Defendants’ services are

¹²⁸ “Snapchat adds ‘challenges’ with cash prizes to its TikTok competitor,” The Verge, Oct. 6, 2021, <https://www.theverge.com/2021/10/6/22711632/snapchat-spotlight-challenges-announced-cash-prizes-tiktok>.

¹²⁹ See *Lemmon v. Snap, Inc.*, 995 F.3d 1085, 1085 (9th Cir. 2021).

¹³⁰ International Law Enforcement Agencies Issue Joint Warning about global financial sextortion crisis, FBI (2023), <https://www.fbi.gov/news/press-releases/international-law-enforcement-agencies-issue-joint-warning-about-global-financial-sextortion-crisis>.

provided in unsafe ways—including flawed age verification, lack of meaningful mechanisms to prevent sham accounts, default-public profiles, matching and recommending connections between adults and minors, promoting unsolicited messages and interactions from adults, and wholly inadequate and ineffective parental controls, among others—that allow children to be easily identified, targeted, accessed, and exploited.

127. Compounding the problem, Defendants routinely fail to report abuse. Steve Grocki, the U.S. Department of Justice’s Chief of the Criminal Division’s Child Exploitation & Obscenity Section, put it this way: “A lot of times, someone has come across something problematic and the platform isn’t doing anything[.]” He went on to say, “[t]hese reports can be of great value because they signal where there are big problems and we can flag those issues to Internet companies, such as when platforms are being exploited by offenders, they aren’t meeting reporting requirements, or when children under the age restriction are accessing inappropriate content.”¹³¹

128. By failing to implement adequate age and identity verification on the use of its services, Defendants knowingly and foreseeably place children in the pathways of sexual predators, who utilize their services and exploit their dangerous features. Age verification on use of Defendants’ services can be dangerous for a variety of reasons, including:

- a. Inaccurate information: Users can easily enter false information, such as a fake date of birth, to bypass age restrictions;
- b. No measures to prevent sham accounts: Defendants’ platforms are structured so that users can easily create multiple accounts under different names and ages; and
- c. Incomplete implementation: Defendants’ platforms only partially implement age verification, such as requiring users to provide their date of birth but not verifying it through any means.

¹³¹ Equality Now, *Steve Grocki Expert Interview - United States* (Nov. 15, 2021), <https://www.equalitynow.org/stories/steve-grocki-expert-interview-united-states/>.

129. To be sure, Defendants possess the technology to identify minors who are posing as adults and adults who are posing as minors, but they do not use this information to identify violative accounts and remove them from the use of its services.

130. By making minors' profiles public by default, Defendants supply sexual predators with detailed background information about children, including their friends, activities, interests, and even location. By providing this information, Defendants put children at risk of being approached and befriended by sexual predators. These young targets have no idea that their posts, friends, pictures, and general online sharing represent a windfall of information that a predator can and will use to sexually exploit or abuse them.

131. Defendants are aware of these very real risks that public-by-default accounts for minors can cause by leaving minors broadly exposed to adult strangers, and yet have only recently (in response to litigation) begun to create default privacy settings for youth accounts—even though they have been aware of these harmful interactions for years.

132. Defendants have also lagged behind in restricting who can reach minor users through Direct Message features. That is particularly egregious in the case of Meta, whose own research has made clear [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹³²

133. Defendants' parental controls are also dangerous in giving parents effective control over their children's online activity, which can lead to kids connecting with predators. These defects take several forms:

- a. Limited scope: parental control tools only partially cover a child's activity, leaving gaps that predators can exploit;

¹³² META3047MDL-003-00107197.

- b. Inadequate monitoring: parental control tools do not provide real-time monitoring of a child's activity, meaning that harmful interactions with predators go unnoticed;
- c. Lack of customization: parents are not able to fully customize their parental control settings to meet the specific needs of their family and children, leaving them with a one-size-fits-all solution that is wholly ineffective in preventing connections with predators; and
- d. Opt-in format: parental control tools that require parents to affirmatively link to their child's account are futile when parents are not notified that their minor child has opened an account on the platform in the first place.

134. Defendants are well aware that vulnerable young users—whom Defendants induce to spend large amounts of time with their services, through a powerful combination of algorithmic recommendations and addictive features make it hard for a user to disengage—are uniquely susceptible to grooming by seasoned sexual predators. Research shows that young users are heavily reliant on their social connections—exploring and shaping their identity through their social relationships.

135. Defendants' dangerous services have benefited sexual predators in many other ways as well. For example, sexual predators leverage Defendants' use of ephemeral, "disappearing" technology to assure young users that there is no risk to them sending a sexual photo or video. Trusting young users are then horrified to discover that these videos have been captured by predators and then circulated to their own friends and contacts or other sexual predators. In some severe cases, young users find themselves in the nightmarish scheme known as "sextortion," where a predator threatens to circulate the sexual images of the minor unless the predator is paid to keep the images under wraps. Law enforcement agencies across the country report that this scheme has become pervasive with Defendants' services.

136. As a direct and foreseeable consequence of Defendants’ connecting children to sexual predators, Defendants’ services facilitate and increase the risk of sexual exploitation, sexual abuse, and sextortion of children.¹³³

137. Many adult predators use Defendants’ apps to facilitate commercial sex acts, including the production and distribution of known Child Sex Abuse Material (“CSAM”).¹³⁴ CSAM is illegal contraband and constitutes a personal injury.¹³⁵ Defendants bear responsibility for the continued creation and distribution of CSAM on their apps, which they know or should know about.¹³⁶ “The unlawful conduct of everyone who reproduces, distributes, or possesses the images of the victim’s abuse ... plays a part in sustaining and aggravating this tragedy.”¹³⁷

138. Tragically, for the young users who have been groomed and cajoled into creating or sending CSAM, these images are rapidly shared, reproduced, and disseminated to other sexual predators at an astonishing rate. A 2021 article published in *Fast Company* revealed, “Facebook noted that more than 90% of the reported CSAM content on its platforms was the ‘same as or visibly similar to previously reported content,’ which is the crux of the problem. Once a piece of CSAM content is uploaded, it spreads like wildfire....”¹³⁸ Each time their images are disseminated

¹³³ “Sextortion is a form of sexual exploitation. The offender uses coercion and threats to compel the victim to produce sexual images or videos engaging in sexual acts. Sometimes the offender already possesses nude or sexual images of the victim, and is threatening to release them if the victim will not do as the offender commands.” United States Attorney’s Office Southern District of Indiana, *What is Sextortion?*, <https://www.justice.gov/media/844516/dl?inline>.

¹³⁴ The term CSAM includes any definition of “Child Pornography” under 18 U.S.C. § 2256(8) and corresponding caselaw, including but not limited to, *United States v. Dost*, 636 F. Supp. 828, 832 (S.D. Cal. 1986), *aff’d sub nom. United States v. Wiegand*, 812 F.2d 1239 (9th Cir. 1987), and *aff’d*, 813 F.2d 1231 (9th Cir. 1987); *see also* Canadian Centre for Child Protection Report, *Project Arachnid: Online Availability of Child Sexual Abuse Material*, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ProjectArachnidReport_Summary_en.pdf.

¹³⁵ *See Amy v. Curtis*, 2020 WL 5365979 (N.D. Cal. Sept. 8, 2020) (extending *In re Boland*, 946 F.3d 335 (6th Cir. 2020)).

¹³⁶ *New York v. Ferber*, 458 U.S. 747, 759 (1982).

¹³⁷ *Paroline v. United States*, 572 U.S. 434, 457 (2014).

¹³⁸ Glen Pounder & Rasty Turek, *On social media, child sexual abuse material spreads faster than it can be taken down*, *Fast Company* (July 14, 2021), <https://www.fastcompany.com/90654692/on-social-media-child-sexual-abuse-material-spreads-faster-than-it-can-be-taken-down>.

it represents a fresh revictimization of young users who are unable to stop the proliferation and spread of their images. Despite this knowledge, Defendants apps do not have readily available technology or less exploitative features that in conjunction with each other could curb, rather than fuel, the sexual exploitation and sextortion of adolescent users, as well as limit the distribution of known CSAM with their services.

139. Tools like PhotoDNA and YouTube’s CSAI Match are image comparison technologies that can detect matches between modified versions of the same image or images. Consider two versions of the same image: one in full color, the other in black and white. To the human eye, these are understood to be images depicting the same thing, but to a computer, they are entirely different. These tools return values indicating the “closeness” between two images.¹³⁹ This process, sometimes called “fuzzy matching” or “perceptual hashing,” looks at the visual content of the image instead of the exact binary image data (i.e., the digital fingerprint or cryptographic hash).

140. Although Defendants have used PhotoDNA and other hash-matching technology to compare suspect images against databases of previously verified CSAM provided by law enforcement or child protection agencies,¹⁴⁰ the manner which they have provided their services diminished the effectiveness and success of these hash-matching technologies and detection models. Hash-matching detection can be made more effective by, for example, prioritizing factors

¹³⁹ Microsoft, *How does PhotoDNA work?*, <https://www.microsoft.com/en-us/photodna>.

¹⁴⁰ This is a process called “hashing.” For a fuller explanation, see Hany Farid, *An Overview of Perceptual Hashing*, J. of Online Trust and Safety (Oct. 2021) at 2-3, <https://tsjournal.org/index.php/jots/article/download/24/14> and Jennifer Langston, *How photodna for video is being used to fight online child exploitation On the Issues* (2020), <https://news.microsoft.com/on-the-issues/2018/09/12/how-photodna-for-video-is-being-used-to-fight-online-child-exploitation/>.

like “tolerance” (i.e., specificity) over “efficiency” (i.e., cost and scalability) and “distinctness” (i.e., more specificity).¹⁴¹

141. In addition, Defendants have provided their services so that they actually impede the ability of young users and their parents to report CSAM or material related to child exploitation. A 2020 report by the Canadian Centre for Child Protection revealed that social media companies platforms make reporting CSAM difficult, if not impossible, for users.¹⁴² While CSAM can be reported as generally harmful material, Defendants provided their services with no specific function to report CSAM contraband. Defendants could easily do so.

142. Reports of CSAM, and requests to remove and take down such material from Defendants’ services, often fall on deaf ears. In many cases, Defendants have failed to take action until legal correspondence was sent.¹⁴³

143. For minor victims addicted to Defendants’ services have an inability to report illegal images as contraband delays their removal and results in repeated re-victimization. Experience shows that minors become obsessed with monitoring the spread of their own CSAM in a desperate attempt to control what often becomes an endless invasion of their privacy.¹⁴⁴ The Canadian Centre for Child Protection reported that one CSAM victim stated, “I spend hours every day searching for my own content, reporting thousands of accounts and posts sharing CSAM.

¹⁴¹ Hany Farid, *An Overview of Perceptual Hashing*, *Journal of Online Trust and Safety* (October 2021) at 2-3, <https://tsjournal.org/index.php/jots/article/download/24/14> (“In practice, the choice of a hash is based on a number of factors, including: 1. Scale. When operating at the scale of a major social media platform, for example, with billions of daily uploads, any hash must be highly efficient and distinct. At this scale, even a 1/100 or even 1/10,000 false positive rate (incorrectly matching two images) is untenable. 2. Tolerance. When trying to limit the upload of, for example, legal adult pornography, resilience may be less important than, for example, trying to limit child sexual abuse imagery.”).

¹⁴² Canadian Centre for Child Protection, *Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms*, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf.

¹⁴³ Angus Crawford, *Facebook failed to remove sexualised images of children*, BBC News (Mar. 7, 2017), <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-39187929>.

¹⁴⁴ Angus Crawford, *Facebook failed to remove sexualised images of children*, BBC News (Mar. 7, 2017), <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-39187929>.

When platforms don't actively look for or prevent this content from being uploaded, the burden falls on me to have these images removed."¹⁴⁵

144. This dangerous service also hinders Defendants' ability to provide timely information to child welfare and law enforcement agencies, even when Defendants know or should know children are in immediate danger.¹⁴⁶

145. Further, Defendants have unreasonably increased their services' dangerousness to children by failing to utilize freely available and industry-proven child protection tools such as Project Arachnid Shield, a CSAM detection platform that processes thousands of images per second and sends removal notices to electronic services providers. Project Arachnid Shield is a free Application Programming Interface ("API") that Defendants apps, could increase their safety and prevent child exploitation and the distribution of CSAM through their platforms.¹⁴⁷ Defendants apps do not have API. Providing their services with such existing and free technology would reduce the amount of CSAM being uploaded onto their platforms to be used as grooming tools on Defendants' adolescent users. Again, to be clear, CSAM is contraband material.

146. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁴⁸ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁴⁹

¹⁴⁵ Angus Crawford, *Facebook failed to remove sexualised images of children*, BBC News (Mar. 7, 2017), <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-39187929>.

¹⁴⁶ Canadian Centre for Child Protection, *Resources & Research: Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions On Popular Platforms*, <https://protectchildren.ca/en/resources-research/csam-reporting-platforms/> (last visited Feb 9, 2023).

¹⁴⁷ Project Arachnid, <https://www.projectarachnid.ca/en/#shield>.

¹⁴⁸ META3047MDL-003-00186841 [REDACTED]

¹⁴⁹ META3047MDL-003-00186838.

147. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

a. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

b. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

c. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

d. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

e. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

f. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

g. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

h. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]¹⁵⁰

H. Defendants could have avoided harming users.

148. Each Defendant solicited customers on the open market and encouraged the use of their dangerous apps.

149. Each Defendant offers its app to the consuming public with dangerous, standardized features (discussed below) that users cannot bargain to change.

150. Each Defendant could have, but purposefully failed to, provide its services to protect and avoid injury to kids and adolescent users.

¹⁵⁰ META3047MDL-003-00186838.

151. Each Defendant knew or should have known that adolescents' developing brains leave them relatively less able to delay gratification, control impulses, or resist immediately pleasurable social rewards.

152. Each Defendant knew or should have known that the more children use social media, the harder it is to quit.

153. Each Defendant knew or should have known that excessive use of its apps has severe and wide-ranging effects on youth mental and physical health.

154. Each Defendant knew or should have known that youth are especially vulnerable to long-term harm from its addictive services.

155. Each Defendant knew or should have known that its platforms attracts, enables, and facilitates child predators, and that such predators use its apps to recruit and sexually exploit children for the production of CSAM and its distribution on Defendants' services.

156. Each Defendant knew or should have known that the longer adolescent users remain engaged with its services, the higher the risk that adult predators will target them.

157. Each Defendant knew or should have known that many of its users are under the age of 13, despite the limitations set out in COPPA.

158. Despite all that, each Defendant failed to adequately warn the public of the known risks and harms of using its services. Each Defendant avoided changes that would have increased youth safety. And each Defendant pressed ahead with changes to keep kids hooked, even though they knew or should have known those changes were risky.

159. Each Defendant was in a superior position to control the risks of harm, ensure the safety of its apps, insure against the harm, and spread the costs of any harm resulting from the dangers of its services.

160. The public did not have, and could not have had, as much knowledge as Defendants about Defendants’ apps and how they were dangerously provided.

161. Users could not have known the dangers of the Defendants’ services.

162. Defendants likewise routinely describe their apps as platforms in statements to public officials and users. In testimony to the Senate Commerce and Judiciary Committees, Mark Zuckerberg stated that Facebook’s “controls are not just to make people feel safe; it’s actually what people want in the product.”¹⁵¹ He noted that Facebook “want[s] our products to be valuable to people.”¹⁵² And he stated that, “fundamentally, at our core, [Meta is] a technology company where the main thing that we do is have engineers and build products.”¹⁵³

II. FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS AS TO PLAINTIFF

A. Schools are responsible for caring for the physical, mental, and emotional health of students.

163. 97% of schools provide mental health services to students, including a majority that provide: (1) individual-based intervention, (2) case management, (3) external referrals, (4) needs assessment, (5) and group-based intervention.¹⁵⁴

164. 69% of schools have made changes to the daily or yearly academic calendar to mitigate potential mental health issues for students and staff.¹⁵⁵

165. 48% of schools lack adequate funding to provide mental health services to all students in need.¹⁵⁶

¹⁵¹ Bloomberg Government, Transcript of Mark Zuckerberg’s Senate Hearing, Washington Post (Apr. 10, 2018), <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2018/04/10/transcript-of-mark-zuckerbergs-senate-hearing/>.

¹⁵² Bloomberg Government, Transcript of Mark Zuckerberg’s Senate Hearing, Washington Post (Apr. 10, 2018), <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2018/04/10/transcript-of-mark-zuckerbergs-senate-hearing/>.

¹⁵³ Bloomberg Government, Transcript of Mark Zuckerberg’s Senate Hearing, Washington Post (Apr. 10, 2018), <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2018/04/10/transcript-of-mark-zuckerbergs-senate-hearing/>.

¹⁵⁴ <https://ies.ed.gov/schoolsurvey/spp/>

¹⁵⁵ *School Pulse Panel*, Institute of Education Sciences (2023), <https://ies.ed.gov/schoolsurvey/spp/>.

¹⁵⁶ *School Pulse Panel*, Institute of Education Sciences (2023), <https://ies.ed.gov/schoolsurvey/spp/>.

166. 33% of schools do not believe that they are able to effectively provide mental health services to all students in need.¹⁵⁷

167. 28% of schools have a specific program for social and emotional learning.¹⁵⁸

168. In a survey of school districts by the Pennsylvania School Boards Association, 78.9% of superintendents reported that their biggest challenge relate to school safety and security was meeting the mental health needs of students. The biggest challenges in meeting the mental health needs of students included: (1) not enough mental health professionals for students, (2) connecting students to outside service providers, and (3) identifying students who are in need of mental health services.¹⁵⁹

B. Plaintiff's community has experienced alarming increases in rates of anxiety, depression, and suicide as a result of the ongoing youth mental health crisis.

169. "According to the Pennsylvania Youth Survey (PAYS), a biennial survey of school students in grades 6, 8, 10, and 12, . . . rates of mental health concerns and self-harm, including suicidal ideation and attempted suicide, have increased among youth in recent years. When asked about mental health concerns, 38.0% of Pennsylvania students report feeling sad or depressed most days – up from 31.7% in 2013. In 2019, 16.2% of surveyed youth reported seriously considering suicide within the past 12 months, while 12.9% made a suicide plan, and 9.7% attempted suicide – up from 7.6% in 2013. On the 2019 PAYS survey, 2.0% of students reported needing medical treatment for a suicide attempt."¹⁶⁰

¹⁵⁷ *School Pulse Panel*, Institute of Education Sciences (2023), <https://ies.ed.gov/schoolsurvey/spp/>.

¹⁵⁸ *School Pulse Panel*, Institute of Education Sciences (2023), <https://ies.ed.gov/schoolsurvey/spp/>.

¹⁵⁹ *State of Education*, Pennsylvania School Boards Associate (2019), <https://www.psba.org/wp-content/uploads/2019/02/StateofEducation-2019.pdf>.

¹⁶⁰ *Pennsylvania Statewide Suicide Prevention Plan*, Pennsylvania Department of Human Services (Sept. 2020), <https://www.dhs.pa.gov/Services/Mental-Health-In-PA/Documents/PA%20Statewide%20Suicide%20Prevention%20Plan.pdf>.

170. The suicide rate in Pennsylvania among people aged 15-24 increased from 9.4 suicides per 100,000 people in 2009 to 11.4 in 2020—a 21% increase over just 11 years.¹⁶¹

171. The suicide rate in Allegheny County increased from 12.0 suicides per 100,000 people in 2011-15 to 14.5 in 2015-19—a 21% increase over just 8 years, compared to an 11% increase across Pennsylvania.¹⁶²

172. In 2018, Allegheny County had a rate of 15.7 suicide deaths per 100,000 people,¹⁶³ well above the national rate of 13.48 in 2020.¹⁶⁴

C. Plaintiff has expended substantial time and money addressing the youth mental health crisis caused by Defendants' social media platforms.

173. Plaintiff is a caretaker of the health, safety, and wellbeing of its students, teachers, and staff and has a duty to provide educational services and care—including mental and emotional care—for the children of their community.

174. The youth mental health crisis has harmed Plaintiff's ability to carry out those duties as students are experiencing ever increasing rates of anxiety, depression, and suicide.

175. At least 30 of Plaintiff's schools have implemented systems to collect students' phones and manage the use of social media during the school day, which is intended to prevent or mitigate highly disruptive behavior and keep students focused on instruction in the classroom.

176. Plaintiff's schools have devoted class time in health class and during social-emotional learning lessons to teach students about the dangers of social media.

¹⁶¹ *Trend: Suicide - Ages 15-24 in Pennsylvania, United States*, United Health Foundation (2022), https://www.americashealthrankings.org/explore/annual/measure/Suicide/population/suicide_15-24/state/PA.

¹⁶² *MHMD-01: Suicide rate (LHI)*, Pennsylvania Department of Health (2019), <https://www.health.pa.gov/topics/HealthStatistics/HealthyPeople/Documents/current/county/mhmd-01-suicide-rate-lhi.aspx>.

¹⁶³ *Suicide Deaths in Allegheny County, Pennsylvania*, Pennsylvania Department of Health (2019), <https://www.health.pa.gov/topics/Documents/Programs/Violence%20and%20Injury%20Prevention/PAVDRS%20-%202018%20Allegheny%20County%20Suicide%20Fact%20Sheet.pdf>.

¹⁶⁴ *Suicide statistics*, American Foundation for Suicide Prevention (2020), <https://afsp.org/suicide-statistics/>.

177. Plaintiff's schools have experienced several large fights between students that were initiated through social media interactions.

178. Plaintiff's schools have had an overwhelming number of students experience physical fights and cyberbullying because of social media usage, which has necessitated Plaintiff's schools managing these interactions and their consequences at an increasing rate over the past few years.

179. Plaintiff's burden is especially exasperated when students have had to attend classes remotely, as students could have easy access to social media throughout the day, and therefore cause more disruption, harm to other students, or be unable to pay attention.

180. Teachers are forced to waste enormous amounts of time intervening in and managing issues arising from students' use of social media.

181. Plaintiff has initiated a renewed focus on their Student Assistance Program (SAP) as a way to ensure that students are receiving appropriate care for the physical, mental, and emotional health and that they are having the necessary conversations with the necessary staff (typically a school administrator, nurse, social worker, special education teacher, as well as school security and school psychologist, as appropriate) to process and determine a course of action to support students in need.

182. In response to a clear need for more support in related to the mental health needs of students, Plaintiff has added 16 counselor and social worker positions for next year, which is at least a \$2 million per year investment. A large portion of the need for such an investment stems from social media usage and the fallout from negative interactions on social media.

183. Plaintiff has invested in an additional mental health opportunity with eLuma Teletherapy, to have more therapists available to our students. This program served over 180

students last year and is on its way to matching that same level of involvement this year. It is open only to students in grades 4-12, both during the school day and at home. Students meet with therapist on Microsoft Teams calls to work through issues with a certified professional. Plaintiff has invested over \$400,000 in this program in the past two years.

184. Plaintiff and its teachers, mental health professionals, and administrators have expended considerable time and resources addressing the youth mental health crisis and will need additional resources as Defendants' social media platforms continue to fuel the mental health crisis.

III. FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS AS TO META

A. Background and overview of Meta's services.

185. Meta operates Facebook and Instagram, two of the world's most popular social media services. In 2022, two billion users worldwide were active on Instagram each month, and almost three billion were monthly active users of Facebook.¹⁶⁵ This enormous reach has been accompanied by enormous damage for adolescent users.

186. Meta understands that its services are used by kids under 13: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁶⁶ It understands that its services are addictive [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁶⁷ It understands that addictive use leads to problems: [REDACTED]

¹⁶⁵ Alex Barinka, *Meta's Instagram Users Reach 2 Billion, Closing In on Facebook*, Bloomberg (Oct. 26, 2022), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2022-10-26/meta-s-instagram-users-reach-2-billion-closing-in-on-facebook>.

¹⁶⁶ META3047MDL-003-00123666 at META3047MDL-003-00123666.

¹⁶⁷ META3047MDL-003-00157036 at META3047MDL-003-00157036.

[REDACTED]¹⁶⁸ And it understands that these problems can be so extreme as to include encounters between adults and minors—[REDACTED]

169 170

187. Despite this knowledge, Meta has abjectly failed at protecting child users of Instagram and Facebook. Rather than stand up a five-alarm effort to stop the problems created by its platforms, [REDACTED]

¹⁷¹ [REDACTED] ¹⁷² Zuckerberg himself was warned personally: [REDACTED]

173

188. Yet Meta did nothing. And its reason was simple:

[REDACTED]¹⁷⁴ Taking action would lower usage of (and therefore lower profits earned from) a critical audience segment. [REDACTED]

175

189. Meta’s frequent gestures towards youth safety were never serious and always driven by public relations: [REDACTED]¹⁷⁶ Meta offered tools to kids and parents, like “time

¹⁶⁸ META3047MDL-003-00011760 at META3047MDL-003-00011761.

¹⁶⁹ META3047MDL-003-00119838 at META3047MDL-003-00119838.

¹⁷⁰ META3047MDL-003-00013254 at META3047MDL-003-00013255.

¹⁷¹META3047MDL-003-00011697 at META3047MDL-003-00011698.

¹⁷² META3047MDL-003-00157133 at META3047MDL-003-00157134.

¹⁷³ META3047MDL-003-00188109 at META3047MDL-003-00188114 (footnote omitted).

██████████ META3047MDL-003-00068863.

¹⁷⁴ META3047MDL-003-00013254 at META3047MDL-003-00013254.

¹⁷⁵ META3047MDL-003-00030070 at META3047MDL-003-00030071.

¹⁷⁶ META3047MDL-003-00053803 at META3047MDL-003-00053803.

spent,” that it knew [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁷⁷ At the same time, Meta engaged in a cynical campaign to [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁷⁸ Meta knew better. Indeed, both Zuckerberg and Instagram CEO Adam Mosseri [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]. Meta could have but failed to prevent the harms suffered by adolescent users.

1. Meta’s origins and the development of Facebook.

190. In October 2003, a sophomore at Harvard College named Mark Zuckerberg hacked into the websites of Harvard’s residential dorms to collect photos of students. He then created a website called “Facemash” that invited users to rank the “hotness” of female students by comparing their photos side-by-side. In just one day, Facemash users cast over 22,000 votes judging the looks of women at Harvard.¹⁷⁹ This was precisely the point of Facemash, as its homepage made clear: “Were we let in for our looks? No. Will we be judged on them? Yes.” When interviewed about Facemash, Zuckerberg stated, “I’m a programmer and I’m interested in the algorithms and math behind it.” Zuckerberg was summoned to appear before Harvard’s disciplinary body.

191. After narrowly escaping expulsion, Zuckerberg began writing code for a new website, thefacebook.com. The growth of the service that subsequently became Facebook has been

¹⁷⁷ META3047MDL-003-00157133.

¹⁷⁸ META3047MDL-003-00082165 at META3047MDL-003-00082165 - META3047MDL-003-00082166.

¹⁷⁹ Katherine Kaplan, *Facemash Creator Survives Ad Board*, Harvard Crimson (Nov. 19, 2003), <https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2003/11/19/facemash-creator-survives-ad-board-the/>; Bari Schwartz, *Hot or Not? Website Briefly Judges Looks*, Harvard Crimson (Nov. 4, 2003), <https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2003/11/4/hot-or-not-website-briefly-judges/>; Sam Brodsky, *Everything to Know About Facemash, the Site Zuckerberg Created in College to Rank ‘Hot’ Women*, Metro (Apr. 12, 2018), <https://www.metro.us/everything-to-know-about-facemash-the-site-zuckerberg-created-in-college-to-rank-hot-women/>; Noam Cohen (@noamcohen), Twitter (Mar. 20, 2018, 3:27 PM).

extensively documented and was the subject of an Academy Award-winning film.¹⁸⁰ By the end of 2005, Facebook had expanded its reach to thousands of colleges and high schools in the United States and abroad. Over the coming years, Facebook grew well beyond campuses, reaching over 100 million total active users by the fall of 2008. By February 2011, Facebook had become the largest online photo host, holding nearly 100 billion photos.¹⁸¹ And by the end of 2011, Facebook, Inc. had turned its initial losses into immense profitability, bringing in annual revenues of \$3.7 billion and working with an operating income of \$1.7 billion.¹⁸²

192. But Facebook knew its future success was not guaranteed. On February 1, 2012, Facebook, Inc. filed with the SEC for an initial public offering. The company's filing noted that its historic performance might not continue indefinitely: "A number of other social networking companies that achieved early popularity have since seen their active user bases or levels of engagement decline, in some cases precipitously. There is no guarantee that we will not experience a similar erosion of our active user base or engagement levels. A decrease in user retention, growth, or engagement could render Facebook less attractive to developers and advertisers, which may have a material and adverse impact on our revenue, business, financial condition, and results of operations."¹⁸³

193. Facebook, Inc. also disclosed that the proliferation of smartphones could materially affect its ongoing prospects. "[O]ur users could decide to increasingly access our services primarily through mobile devices. We do not currently directly generate any meaningful revenue

¹⁸⁰ *The Social Network* (Columbia Pictures 2010).

¹⁸¹ Richard MacManus, *Facebook Mobile Usage Set to Explode*, Read Write Web (Oct. 27 2011), https://web.archive.org/web/20120520003847/http://www.readwriteweb.com/archives/facebook_mobile_usage_set_to_explode.php; Athima Chansanchai, *One Third of Year's Digital Photos Are on Facebook*, NBC News (Sept. 20, 2011), <https://www.nbcnews.com/news/world/one-third-years-digital-photos-are-facebook-flna120576>.

¹⁸² Erick Schonfeld, *Facebook's Profits: \$1 Billion, On \$3.7 Billion in Revenues*, TechCrunch (Feb. 1, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/02/01/facebook-1-billion-profit/>.

¹⁸³ Facebook, Inc., Registration Statement (Form S-1) (Feb. 1, 2012) at 11, <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1326801/000119312512034517/d287954ds1.html>.

from the use of Facebook mobile services, and our ability to do so successfully is unproven. Accordingly, if users continue to increasingly access Facebook mobile services as a substitute for access through personal computers, and if we are unable to successfully implement monetization strategies for our mobile users, our revenue and financial results may be negatively affected.”

194. Facebook actively pursued changes to its services, including adding features offered to the public. As a result of these actions, Facebook achieved its goal. As of October 2021, Facebook had ballooned to roughly 2.91 billion monthly active users, thus reaching 59% of the world’s social networking population, the only social media service to reach over half of all social media users. At least 6% of these users are children in the U.S. between the ages of 9 and 11.¹⁸⁴

195. Since its inception, Facebook has implemented several changes, developments to its services to long user engagement and impose alterations to the user experience. As discussed further below, several changes and developments render the service as dangerous and harmful.

2. Modifications of Facebook’s service features over time.

196. When Meta launched thefacebook.com on February 4, 2004, only Harvard students could create accounts using their university-issued email addresses. In March 2004, students at Stanford, Columbia, and Yale were permitted to join, and eventually, any student with a college- or university-issued email address could join Facebook.¹⁸⁵ In 2005, Facebook was opened to high school students, provided they were invited by someone who was already using the site.¹⁸⁶ By September 2006, Facebook was opened to all users.¹⁸⁷ At the time, Meta claimed that it was open

¹⁸⁴ Katherine Schaeffer, *7 facts about Americans and Instagram*, Pew Research Center (Oct. 7, 2021), <https://www.pewresearch.org/fact-tank/2021/10/07/7-facts-about-americans-and-instagram/>.

¹⁸⁵ Saul Hansell, *Site Previously for Students Will Be Opened to Others*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 12, 2006), <https://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/12/technology/site-previously-for-students-will-be-opened-to-others.html>.

¹⁸⁶ Ellen Rosen, *THE INTERNET; Facebook.com Goes to High School*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2005), <https://www.nytimes.com/2005/10/16/nyregion/the-internet-facebookcom-goes-to-high-school.html>.

¹⁸⁷ Saul Hansell, *Site Previously for Students Will Be Opened to Others*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 12, 2006), <https://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/12/technology/site-previously-for-students-will-be-opened-to-others.html>.

only to persons aged 13 and older with a valid email address.¹⁸⁸ However, Meta did not require verification of a user's age or identity and did not verify users' email addresses. As a result, underage users could easily register an account with and access Facebook.

197. At first, Facebook was a collection of personal profiles and single photos. It was described by the *New York Times* as “a fancy electronic version of the whiteboard that students often mount on their doors to leave and receive messages.”¹⁸⁹ Users could post a single profile picture, add personal details such as gender, birthdate, phone number, and interests, or connect with other users by “friending” them, either by searching for them or inviting them by email. Users could also display their relationship statuses, or, alternatively what they were “[l]ooking for” (e.g., friendship, dating, a relationship, “random play,” or “whatever I can get”) and “[i]nterested in” (e.g., women, men). In September 2004, however, Meta introduced “the Wall,” which allowed users to interact with “friends” by posting on each other's profiles. This feature kept users returning to Facebook to monitor Wall activity.

198. In 2005, Facebook began allowing users to upload an unlimited amount of photos, making it the first photo hosting website to do so.¹⁹⁰

199. In 2006, Meta introduced the Newsfeed to Facebook.¹⁹¹ While previously “[e]very browsing session was like a click-powered treasure hunt,”¹⁹² the Newsfeed provided a centralized home page where users could view their friends' activity, including any changes to their profiles

¹⁸⁸ Saul Hansell, *Site Previously for Students Will Be Opened to Others*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 12, 2006), <https://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/12/technology/site-previously-for-students-will-be-opened-to-others.html>.

¹⁸⁹ Ellen Rosen, *THE INTERNET; Facebook.com Goes to High School*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2005), <https://www.nytimes.com/2005/10/16/nyregion/the-internet-facebookcom-goes-to-high-school.html>.

¹⁹⁰ Craig Kanalley, *A History of Facebook Photos* (Infographic), The Huffington Post (Aug. 2, 2011), https://www.huffpost.com/entry/facebook-photos-infographic_n_916225.

¹⁹¹ Think Marketing, *This Is How Facebook Has Changed Over the Past 14 Years* (February 6, 2018), <https://thinkmarketingmagazine.com/facebook-celebrates-14-years-of-milestones-a-timeline/>.

¹⁹² Jillian D'Onfro, *Facebook's News Feed is 10 years old. This is how the site has changed*, World Economic Forum (Sept. 9, 2016), <https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2016/09/facebook-s-news-feed-is-10-years-old-this-is-how-the-site-has-changed>.

or activity on the app, such as, for example, uploading new pictures, or a change in relationship status.¹⁹³ It was the first “social feed” of its kind, and increased time spent on the platform.¹⁹⁴ Users immediately decried this feature as an invasion of privacy.¹⁹⁵ Mark Zuckerberg rationalized the feature by saying “we agree, stalking isn’t cool; but being able to know what’s going on in your friends’ lives is.”¹⁹⁶ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁹⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]¹⁹⁸ [REDACTED]¹⁹⁹

200. In May 2007, Meta launched a video service on Facebook, which allowed it to compete with YouTube and the then-popular Myspace.²⁰⁰ Users could upload videos, or record them from a webcam.

201. In April 2008, Meta launched Facebook Chat, which later became Facebook Messenger, allowing users to have private conversations with each other.²⁰¹ Facebook Chat

¹⁹³ Jillian D’Onfro, *Facebook’s News Feed is 10 years old. This is how the site has changed*, World Economic Forum (Sept. 9, 2016), <https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2016/09/facebooks-news-feed-is-10-years-old-this-is-how-the-site-has-changed>.

¹⁹⁴ Jillian D’Onfro, *Facebook’s News Feed is 10 years old. This is how the site has changed*, World Economic Forum (Sept. 9, 2016), <https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2016/09/facebooks-news-feed-is-10-years-old-this-is-how-the-site-has-changed>.

¹⁹⁵ Moneywatch, *Facebook Under Fire for New Feature*, CBS News (Sept. 7, 2006), <https://www.cbsnews.com/news/facebook-under-fire-for-new-feature/>.

¹⁹⁶ Gillian D’Onfro, *Facebook’s News Feed is 10 years old. This is how the site has changed*, World Economic Forum (Sept. 9, 2016), <https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2016/09/facebooks-news-feed-is-10-years-old-this-is-how-the-site-has-changed>.

¹⁹⁷ Haugen_00010114 at Haugen_00010121.

¹⁹⁸ See, e.g., META3047MDL-003-00161881 at META3047MDL-003-00161915 [REDACTED]

¹⁹⁹ See META3047MDL-003-00170806 at META3047MDL-003-00170822 [REDACTED]

²⁰⁰ Pete Cashmore, *Facebook Video Launches: YouTube Beware!*, Mashable (May 24, 2007), <https://mashable.com/archive/facebook-video-launches>.

²⁰¹ Dan Farber, *Facebook Chat begins to roll out*, CNET (April 6, 2008), <https://www.cnet.com/culture/facebook-chat-begins-to-roll-out/>.

appeared as a permanent bar across the bottom of users' screens; it also provided users the ability to see which friends were "online" and presumably available to chat. Facebook Chat allowed users to immerse themselves even deeper into Meta's platform; one commentator noted that "[b]y making Facebook more real time/presence oriented, Facebook session length should go up a lot."²⁰²

202. In May 2008, Meta added a "People You May Know" feature to the service, touting it as a way to "connect [users] to more of your friends" on Facebook.²⁰³ Facebook's algorithms utilize the vast amount of data it collects from its users to suggest users for "friending" to each other.²⁰⁴ It utilizes information such as a user's friends list, their friends' friends list, education information, and work information, along with other data, to make these suggestions.²⁰⁵ Some users dislike the feature, complaining that it constantly shows them people they do not want to friend, or even suggests people in sexually explicit poses,²⁰⁶ but Facebook does not provide the option to disable this feature.

203. In February 2009, Meta launched the "Like" button on Facebook.²⁰⁷ The button allowed users to quickly react to content, as opposed to typing out a comment. Facebook's algorithm counts and displays likes to other users. The measure also served as a social measuring stick, by which users could gauge the success of their posts, photographs, and videos. Soon after,

²⁰² Dan Farber, *Facebook Chat begins to roll out*, CNET (April 6, 2008), <https://www.cnet.com/culture/facebook-chat-begins-to-roll-out/>.

²⁰³ Kashmir Hill, 'People You May Know: A Controversial Facebook Feature's 10-Year History', Gizmodo (Aug. 8, 2018), <https://gizmodo.com/people-you-may-know-a-controversial-facebook-features-1827981959>.

²⁰⁴ Kashmir Hill, 'People You May Know: A Controversial Facebook Feature's 10-Year History', Gizmodo (Aug. 8, 2018), <https://gizmodo.com/people-you-may-know-a-controversial-facebook-features-1827981959>.

²⁰⁵ Kashmir Hill, 'People You May Know: A Controversial Facebook Feature's 10-Year History', Gizmodo (Aug. 8, 2018), <https://gizmodo.com/people-you-may-know-a-controversial-facebook-features-1827981959>.

²⁰⁶ Kashmir Hill, 'People You May Know: A Controversial Facebook Feature's 10-Year History', Gizmodo (Aug. 8, 2018), <https://gizmodo.com/people-you-may-know-a-controversial-facebook-features-1827981959>.

²⁰⁷ Will Oremus, *How Facebook Designed the Like Button—and made social media into a Popularity Contest*, Fast Company (Nov. 15, 2022), <https://www.fastcompany.com/90780140/the-inside-story-of-how-facebook-designed-the-like-button-and-made-social-media-into-a-popularity-contest>.

Meta expanded the “Like” feature to comments as well. Users could also use the “Like” button to follow public figures, such as brands or publishers. When a user liked a brand, for example, Meta would use that information to show ads for that brand to the user’s friends on Facebook.²⁰⁸ In April 2010, Meta launched “social plug-ins” that would allow people to “Like” things on the Internet outside of Facebook. Meta used the button to track Facebook users’ engagement across the Internet, leveraging the data it gathered to target ads and fuel the Newsfeed algorithm.²⁰⁹ The button also shaped users’ own behavior, as they were conditioned to act and interact in whatever ways would generate the like rewards, or risk having their content hidden from their friends’ newsfeeds.²¹⁰

204. 2009 also marked the change from chronological to algorithmic ordering for the news feed, with Meta now dictating which posts users would see by highlighting “Top Stories” in each user’s News Feed.²¹¹

205. In December 2010, Meta began using facial recognition to identify people in users’ Facebook photos and suggest that users tag them.²¹² Rather than letting users opt-in to the feature, Meta automatically enabled it for all users.²¹³

²⁰⁸ Will Oremus, *How Facebook Designed the Like Button—and made social media into a Popularity Contest*, Fast Company (Nov. 15, 2022), <https://www.fastcompany.com/90780140/the-inside-story-of-how-facebook-designed-the-like-button-and-made-social-media-into-a-popularity-contest>.

²⁰⁹ Will Oremus, *How Facebook Designed the Like Button—and made social media into a Popularity Contest*, Fast Company (Nov. 15, 2022), <https://www.fastcompany.com/90780140/the-inside-story-of-how-facebook-designed-the-like-button-and-made-social-media-into-a-popularity-contest>.

²¹⁰ Will Oremus, *How Facebook Designed the Like Button—and made social media into a Popularity Contest*, Fast Company (Nov. 15, 2022), <https://www.fastcompany.com/90780140/the-inside-story-of-how-facebook-designed-the-like-button-and-made-social-media-into-a-popularity-contest>.

²¹¹ Alex Hern, *Facebook to Restore Chronological Feed of Posts from Friends*, The Guardian (July 21, 2022), <https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2022/jul/21/facebook-to-restore-chronological-feed-of-posts-from-friends>.

²¹² Ben Parr, *Facebook Brings Facial Recognition to Photo Tagging*, Mashable (Dec. 16, 2010), <http://www.cnn.com/2010/TECH/social-media/12/16/facebook-facial-recognition.mashable/index.html>.

²¹³ Charles Arthur, *Facebook In New Privacy Row Over Facial Recognition Feature*, The Guardian (June 8, 2011), <https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2011/jun/08/facebook-privacy-facial-recognition?INTCMP=SRCH>.

206. Meta also debuted infinite scrolling in 2010, initially for photos specifically, but later for its core News Feed, ensuring that users would never reach the bottom of a page and would, instead, keep scrolling without end or limits, leading to excessive and compulsive platform use.²¹⁴

207. In August 2012, Meta introduced the Facebook Messenger app, a feature that allowed users to see when their friends were last active on the platform.²¹⁵

208. In August 2015, Meta launched Facebook Live, which allowed users to live-stream videos.²¹⁶ It immediately prompted more engagement with the platform and furthered Meta's goal of keeping users coming back, both to create the videos and to interact with them.²¹⁷

209. In February 2016, Meta expanded Facebook's "Like" feature for posts, adding "Reactions" such as "like," "love," "haha," "wow," "sad," and "angry."²¹⁸ The following year, reactions were extended to comments.²¹⁹ In a manner similar to likes, these reactions further manipulated adolescents' behavior, thus impacting their mental health and well-being and causing damage and harm to adolescent users.

210. In March 2017, following the launch of a similar services on Instagram, Meta introduced Facebook Stories, with the hope of competing with the success of Snapchat among young people.²²⁰ With Stories, users could post short, ephemeral videos that appeared for 24-hours

²¹⁴ Bob Leggit, *How the Internet Destroyed Your Attention Span*, Popzazzle (Apr. 30, 2021), <https://popzazzle.blogspot.com/2021/04/how-the-internet-destroyed-your-attention-span.html>.

²¹⁵ Billy Gallagher, *Facebook Brings Notifications, Album-Specific Uploads to Standalone Camera App*, Tech Crunch (Aug. 28, 2012), https://techcrunch.com/2012/08/28/facebook-brings-notifications-album-specific-uploads-to-standalone-camera-app/?icid=tc_dan-schawbel_art&blogger=dan-schawbel#.

²¹⁶ Joe Lazauskus, *The Untold Story of Facebook Live*, Fast Company (Sept. 29, 2016), <https://www.fastcompany.com/3064182/the-untold-story-of-facebook-live>.

²¹⁷ Joe Lazauskus, *The Untold Story of Facebook Live*, Fast Company (Sept. 29, 2016), <https://www.fastcompany.com/3064182/the-untold-story-of-facebook-live>.

²¹⁸ Casey Newton, *Facebook Rolls Out Expanded Like Button Reactions Around the World*, The Verge (Feb. 24, 2016), <https://www.theverge.com/2016/2/24/11094374/facebook-reactions-like-button>.

²¹⁹ Natt Garun, *Facebook Reactions Have Now Infiltrated Comments*, The Verge (May 3, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/5/3/15536812/facebook-reactions-now-available-comments>.

²²⁰ Casey Newton, *Facebook Launches Stories to Complete its All-out Assault on Snapchat*, The Verge (Mar. 28, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/3/28/15081398/facebook-stories-snapchat-camera-direct>.

at the top of friends' News Feeds.²²¹ Stories keep users coming back to the platform at least daily, feeding performance metrics that are crucial to Meta's bottom line, or otherwise risk missing out.

211. Later that year, in December 2017, Meta rolled out Facebook Kids, a messaging app marketed for kid's ages 6 to 12,²²² for the purpose of getting younger users on its service sooner. The app does not require a Facebook account, since COPPA prohibits users under the age of 13 from signing up for such accounts, and instead allows children to create accounts that are managed through parents' Facebook accounts.²²³ Meta touted it as a way to "give[] parents more control."²²⁴ The app, however, still collects an extraordinary amount of data about its child users, including the content of their messages, any photos they send, and what features they use on the app.²²⁵ Currently, there are no other official Facebook services are marketed publicly by Meta as intended for children under 13 (despite the proliferation of such users on Instagram and Facebook). However, as of April 2021 Meta was actively seeking to develop ways for children as young as 6 to use the service .²²⁶

212. In August 2020, Meta introduced "Reels" on Instagram.²²⁷ Reels are short videos posted by other Instagram users, presented in an algorithmically generated feed, and in a full-

²²¹ Casey Newton, *Facebook Launches Stories to Complete its All-out Assault on Snapchat*, The Verge (Mar. 28, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/3/28/15081398/facebook-stories-snapchat-camera-direct>.

²²² Nick Statt, *Facebook Launches a Version of Messenger for Young Children*, The Verge (Dec. 4, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/12/4/16725494/facebook-messenger-kids-app-launch-ios-iphone-preview>.

²²³ Nick Statt, *Facebook Launches a Version of Messenger for Young Children*, The Verge (Dec. 4, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/12/4/16725494/facebook-messenger-kids-app-launch-ios-iphone-preview>.

²²⁴ Loren Chang, *Introducing Messenger Kids, a New App for Families to Connect*, Meta (Dec. 4, 2017), <https://about.fb.com/news/2017/12/introducing-messenger-kids-a-new-app-for-families-to-connect/>.

²²⁵ Nitasha Tiku, *Facebook for 6-Year-Olds? Welcome to Messenger Kids*, Wired (Dec. 5, 2017), <https://www.wired.com/story/facebook-for-6-year-olds-welcome-to-messenger-kids/>.

²²⁶ Ezra Kaplan and Jo Ling Kent, *Documents reveal Facebook targeted children as young as 6 for consumer base*, NBC News (Oct. 29, 2021), https://www.nbcnews.com/tech/social-media/facebook-documents-reveal-company-targeted-children-young-6-rcna4021?cid=sm_npd_nn_tw_ma.

²²⁷ Instagram, *Introducing Instagram Reels* (Aug. 5, 2020), <https://about.fb.com/news/2020/08/introducing-instagram-reels/>.

screen format popularized by TikTok. Meta subsequently introduced Reels to Facebook in 2021.²²⁸ As explained more fully below, Meta committed to making videos more and more a part of their platforms to attract and keep younger users in the face of competition from TikTok.

3. Facebook's acquisition and control of Instagram.

213. On or around April 6, 2012, Zuckerberg called Kevin Systrom, one of the co-founders of Instagram, offering to purchase his company.²²⁹

214. Instagram launched as a mobile-only app that allowed users to create, filter, and share photos. On the first day of its release in October 2010, it gained a staggering 25,000 users.²³⁰ By April 2012, Instagram had approximately 27 million users. When Instagram released an Android version of its app—right around the time of Zuckerberg's call—it was downloaded more than a million times in less than a day.²³¹ Instagram's popularity is so widespread and image-based, a new term has grown up around it for the perfect image or place: "Instagrammable."²³²

215. On April 9, 2012, just days after Zuckerberg's overture to Systrom, Facebook, Inc. purchased Instagram, Inc. for \$1 billion in cash and stock. This purchase price was double the valuation of Instagram implied by a round of funding the company closed days earlier.²³³

²²⁸ Facebook, *Launching Reels on Facebook in the US* (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://about.fb.com/news/2021/09/launching-reels-on-facebook-us/>.

²²⁹ Nicholas Carlson, *Here's The Chart That Scared Zuckerberg Into Spending \$1 Billion On Instagram*, Insider (Apr. 14, 2012), <https://www.businessinsider.com/heres-the-chart-that-scared-zuckerberg-into-spending-1-billion-on-instagram-2012-4>.

²³⁰ Dan Blystone, *Instagram: What It Is, Its History, and How the Popular App Works*, Investopedia (Oct. 22, 2022), <https://www.investopedia.com/articles/investing/102615/story-instagram-rise-1-photo0sharing-app.asp#:~:text=History%20of%20Instagram>.

²³¹ Kim-Mai Cutler, *From 0 to \$1 billion in two years: Instagram's rose-tinted ride to glory* TechCrunch (Apr. 9, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/04/09/instagram-story-facebook-acquisition/>.

²³² Sarah Frier, *No Filter* 81 (2020).

²³³ Alexia Tsotsis, *Right Before Acquisition, Instagram Closed \$50M At A \$500M Valuation From Sequoia, Thrive, Greylock And Benchmark*, TechCrunch (Apr. 9, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/04/09/right-before-acquisition-instagram-closed-50m-at-a-500m-valuation-from-sequoia-thrive-greylock-and-benchmark/>.

216. Facebook, Inc. held its initial public offering less than two months after acquiring Instagram, Inc.²³⁴

217. Zuckerberg's willingness to pay a premium for Instagram was driven by his instinct that Instagram would be vital to reaching a younger, smartphone-oriented audience—and thus critical to his company's going-forward success.

218. This was prescient. Instagram's revenue grew exponentially from 2015 to 2022.²³⁵ A study conducted in the second quarter of 2018 showed that, over the prior year, advertisers' spending on Instagram grew by 177%—more than four times the growth of ad spending on Facebook.²³⁶ Likewise, visits to Instagram rose by 236%, nearly *thirty* times the growth in site visits experienced by Facebook during the same period.²³⁷ By 2021, Instagram accounted for over half of Meta's \$50.3 billion in net advertising revenues.²³⁸

219. Meta has claimed credit for Instagram's success since its acquisition. Zuckerberg told market analysts that Instagram “wouldn't be what it is without everything that we put into it, whether that's the infrastructure or our advertising model.”²³⁹

220. Instagram has become the most popular photo-sharing social media services among teenagers and young adults in the United States. 62% of American teens use Instagram, with 10%

²³⁴ Evelyn Rusli & Peter Eavis, *Facebook Raises \$16Billion in I.P.O.*, N.Y. Times (May 17, 2012), <https://archive.nytimes.com/dealbook.nytimes.com/2012/05/17/facebook-raises-16-billion-in-i-p-o/>.

²³⁵ See Josh Constine, *Instagram Hits 1 Billion Monthly Users, Up From 800M in September*, TechCrunch (June 20, 2018), <https://techcrunch.com/2018/06/20/instagram-1-billion-users/> (showing meteoric rise in monthly active users over period and reporting year-over-year revenue increase of 70% from 2017-2018).

²³⁶ Merkle, *Digital Marketing Report 3* (Q2 2018), <https://www.merkleinc.com/thought-leadership/digital-marketing-report/digital-marketing-report-q2-2018>.

²³⁷ Merkle, *Digital Marketing Report 19* (Q2 2018), <https://www.merkleinc.com/thought-leadership/digital-marketing-report/digital-marketing-report-q2-2018>.

²³⁸ Sara Lebow, *For the First Time, Instagram Contributes Over Half of Facebook's US Ad Revenues*, eMarketer (Nov. 2, 2021), <https://www.emarketer.com/content/instagram-contributes-over-half-of-facebook-us-ad-revenues>.

²³⁹ Salvador Rodriguez, *Mark Zuckerberg Is Adamant that Instagram Should Not Be Broken Off from Facebook*, CNBC (Oct. 20, 2019), <https://www.cnn.com/2019/10/30/mark-zuckerberg-is-adamant-that-instagram-should-remain-with-facebook.html>.

of users reporting that they use it “almost constantly.”²⁴⁰ Instagram’s young user base has become even more important to Meta as the number of teens using Facebook has decreased over time.²⁴¹

221. Facebook’s and Instagram’s success, and the riches they have generated for Meta, have come at an unconscionable cost in human suffering. In September 2021, The Wall Street Journal began publishing internal documents leaked by former Facebook product manager Frances Haugen.²⁴²

222. The documents are disturbing. They reveal that, according to Meta’s researchers, 13.5% of U.K. girls reported more frequent suicidal thoughts and 17% of teen girls reported worsening eating disorders after starting to use Instagram.²⁴³ Over 40% of Instagram users who reported feeling “unattractive” said that feeling began while using Instagram,²⁴⁴ and 32% of teen girls who already felt bad about their bodies felt even worse because of the app.²⁴⁵

223. Internal Meta presentations from 2019 and 2020 were unsparing in their conclusions about the harms caused by Instagram: “We make body image issues worse for one in

²⁴⁰ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Research. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>; see also Piper Sandler, *Taking Stock With Teens* 19 (Fall 2021), https://piper2.bluematrix.com/docs/pdf/3bad99c6-e44a-4424-8fb1-0e3adfcdbd1d4.pdf?utm_source=newsletter&utm_medium=email&utm_campaign=newsletter_axiosam&stream=top (eighty-one percent of teens use Instagram at least once a month).

²⁴¹ Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles with Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 26, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

²⁴² The collection of Wall Street Journal articles are available online via the following link: <https://www.wsj.com/articles/the-facebook-files-11631713039?mod=bigtop-breadcrumb>.

²⁴³ Morgan Keith, *Facebook’s Internal Research Found its Instagram Platform Contributes to Eating Disorders and Suicidal Thoughts in Teenage Girls, Whistleblower Says*, Insider (Oct. 3, 2021), <https://www.businessinsider.com/facebook-knows-data-instagram-eating-disorders-suicidal-thoughts-whistleblower-2021-10>.

²⁴⁴ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; Facebook Staff, *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.* 9 (Mar. 26, 2020), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>.

²⁴⁵ Billy Perrigo, *Instagram Makes Teen Girls Hate Themselves. Is That a Bug or a Feature?*, Time (Sept. 16, 2021), <https://time.com/6098771/instagram-body-image-teen-girls/>.

three teen girls.” “Mental health outcomes related to this can be severe.” “Aspects of Instagram exacerbate each other to create a perfect storm.”²⁴⁶

224. Haugen’s revelations made clear to the public what Meta has long known: in an effort to addict kids and promote usage, Meta’s services exploit the neurobiology of developing brains, and all the insecurities, status anxieties, and beauty comparisons that come along with it. In a bid for higher profits, Meta ignored the harms resulting from its overuse-oriented business model, which are widespread, serious, long-term, and in tragic instances fatal.

4. Modifications of Instagram’s platform features over time.

225. In its earliest form, Instagram was a photo-sharing app. Users could post still images—enhanced by the platform’s suite of built-in photo filters—“follow” other users, and “Like” or comment on posts by other users, all in a centralized chronological feed. Instagram also allowed users to see their friends’ activity—such as liking or commenting on a post, or following other accounts—on the app, through its “Following” tab.

226. In January 2011, Instagram added hashtags, which allowed users to group together posts about particular topics.²⁴⁷

227. Since acquiring Instagram, Meta has introduced to the service a host of additional features to drive pre-teen and teenage engagement and, in doing so, increase advertising revenues.

228. In June 2013, in addition to the still, filtered images for which was known, Instagram began to support videos of up to 15 seconds.²⁴⁸ This feature also included 13 new

²⁴⁶ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>.

²⁴⁷ *Diving Deep into the Science of the Instagram Algorithm*, Signalytics, <https://about.fb.com/news/2020/08/introducing-instagram-reels/>.

²⁴⁸ Colleen Taylor, *Instagram Launches 15-Second Video Sharing Feature, With 13 Filters And Editing*, Tech Crunch (June 20, 2013), <https://techcrunch.com/2013/06/20/facebook-instagram-video/>.

specially-created filters that could be applied to the videos. At the time, this feature satisfied what some characterized as the “years-long search for an ‘Instagram for video,’”²⁴⁹ and allowed Instagram to compete with a popular video-sharing platform at the time, Vine. It also allowed users posting videos to select their “favorite” scene from the video to be displayed as the cover image on video posts. According to Systrom, this ensured that user’s videos were “beautiful even when they’re not playing.”²⁵⁰ Despite this, Instagram remained largely a photo-sharing app.

229. In December 2013, Meta added Instagram Direct, a feature that allows users to send messages or posts to specific people directly from the app.²⁵¹ This function allowed Instagram to compete against messaging platforms like Snapchat that were gaining popularity among teens and pre-teens.

230. In June 2015, Meta opened Instagram to all advertisers, weaving advertisements into users’ Feeds.²⁵²

231. In March 2016, Meta did away with Instagram’s chronological feed and implemented engagement-based ranking algorithms.²⁵³ Now, upon opening the app, users would no longer see posts from people they followed in the order they were posted; instead, they would encounter an algorithmic feed, similar to the one employed on Meta’s other service, Facebook. At the time, Meta said that the new algorithmic feed would rank the order of posts in users’ feeds

²⁴⁹ Colleen Taylor, *Instagram Launches 15-Second Video Sharing Feature, With 13 Filters And Editing*, Tech Crunch (June 20, 2013), <https://techcrunch.com/2013/06/20/facebook-instagram-video/>.

²⁵⁰ Kevin Systrom, *Introducing Video on Instagram*, Instagram (June 20, 2013), <https://about.instagram.com/blog/announcements/introducing-video-on-instagram>.

²⁵¹ Jordan Crook, *Instagram Introduces Instagram Direct*, Tech Crunch (Dec. 12, 2013), <https://techcrunch.com/2013/12/12/instagram-messaging/>.

²⁵² Vinu Goel & Sydney Ember, *Instagram to Open its Photo Feed to Ads*, N.Y. Times (June 2, 2015), <https://www.nytimes.com/2015/06/03/technology/instagram-to-announce-plans-to-expand-advertising.html>.

²⁵³ Alex Heath, *Instagram is about to go through its most radical change ever*, Insider (Mar. 15, 2016), <https://www.businessinsider.com/instagram-to-introduce-algorithmic-timeline-2016-3>.

based on the “likelihood that [they would] be interested in the content, [their] relationship with the person posting and the timeliness of the post. . . .”²⁵⁴

232. In February 2016, with the popularity of video content rising on Instagram, Meta added view counts to videos, allowing users to see how many times users had viewed their posts.²⁵⁵ Later that year, in December 2016, Instagram added the ability to “Like” comments to posts (symbolized by a heart emoji).²⁵⁶ Both features became a source of additional motivation by users to seek social acceptance and validation.

233. In August 2016, Meta introduced Instagram Stories,²⁵⁷ another feature intended to compete against Snapchat for the youth market. Systrom has admitted that the feature was copied from a Snapchat feature popular with children called “Snapchat Stories.”²⁵⁸ Later that year, in November 2016, Meta introduced another feature, Instagram Live,²⁵⁹ marketed to compete with both Snapchat’s ephemeral, disappearing posts, and the live-streamed videos of a then-popular services called Periscope. Live permitted users to live stream video, which disappeared as soon as the live stream stopped.

²⁵⁴ Alex Heath, *Instagram is about to go through its most radical change ever*, Insider (Mar. 15, 2016), <https://www.businessinsider.com/instagram-to-introduce-algorithmic-timeline-2016-3>.

²⁵⁵ Michael Zhang, *Instagram is Adding View Counts to Your Videos*, PetaPixel (Feb. 11, 2016), <https://petapixel.com/2016/02/11/instagram-adding-view-counts-videos/>.

²⁵⁶ Hayley Tsukayama, *Instagram will soon let you like comments – or even turn them off completely*, Wash. Post (Dec. 6, 2016), <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2016/12/06/instagram-will-soon-let-you-like-comments-or-even-turn-them-off-completely/>.

²⁵⁷ Instagram, *Introducing Instagram Stories* (Aug. 2, 2016), <https://about.instagram.com/blog/announcements/introducing-instagram-stories#:~:text=Today%2C%20we're%20introducing%20Instagram,a%20slideshow%20format%3A%20your%20story>.

²⁵⁸ Rachel Kraus, *Instagram Founder Admits He Blatantly Stole Stories from Snapchat*, Mashable (Mar. 11, 2019), <https://mashable.com/article/kevin-systrom-instagram-stories-snapchat>; Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles With Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

²⁵⁹ Josh Constine, *Instagram launches disappearing Live video and messages*, Tech Crunch (Nov. 21, 2016), <https://techcrunch.com/2016/11/21/instagram-live/>.

234. In December 2016, Meta introduced a service feature that allowed users to “save” posts from other users.²⁶⁰ By tapping a bookmark icon underneath posts in their feeds, users could save posts for later, in a private tab that was viewable only to the saving user.

235. In April 2017, Meta introduced another feature with appeal to children, an offline mode that allows users to view posts and interact with Instagram even when they do not have access to an Internet connection,²⁶¹ for example when riding a bus to or from school.

236. In January 2018, Meta launched a feature allowing Instagram users to see when others they had messaged with were active, or most recently active, on Instagram. This feature exploits social reciprocity which, as explained above, results in more time spent using the service.

237. In June 2018, at the same time it announced that Instagram had grown to one billion users, Meta introduced IGTV, both in the Instagram app and as a standalone service.²⁶² IGTV was intended to rival YouTube. IGTV allowed users to upload videos up to one-hour long.

238. In September 2018, Systrom and Instagram co-founder Mike Krieger resigned from Instagram, and Facebook named Adam Mosseri, a 10-year veteran of Facebook, as Instagram’s new CEO.

239. Under Mosseri’s leadership, Instagram aggressively focused on acquiring and maximizing the engagement of young users. In 2018, Instagram allotted most of its global annual marketing budget to targeting 13- to 15-year old children, a marketing demographic it calls “early high school.”²⁶³ According to Meta, these users represent the platform’s “teen foothold” for its

²⁶⁰ Lisa Eadicicco, *Instagram Just Added a New Feature that Lets You Save Other Users’ Posts*, Time (Dec. 14, 2016), <https://time.com/4602063/instagram-new-update-features-2016/>.

²⁶¹ Josh Constine, *Instagram on Android gets offline mode*, Tech Crunch (Apr. 18, 2017), <https://techcrunch.com/2017/04/18/instagram-offline/>.

²⁶² Kevin Systrom, *Welcome to IGTV, our New Video App*, Instagram (June 20, 2018), <https://about.instagram.com/blog/announcements/welcome-to-igtv>.

²⁶³ Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles With Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

“US pipeline.”²⁶⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁶⁵ Meta has expressly sought to maximize metrics like “teen time spent” on the Instagram services.²⁶⁶

240. One way Meta sought to increase its teen metrics was through its launch of “Reels” in August 2020, which mimicked the format of videos on TikTok. As noted, Reels mirrors TikTok by algorithmically presenting short, “full-screen” videos posted by other Instagram users. Like TikTok, Reels counts and displays the number of likes, follows, comments, shares, and views of a video. The following year, Meta did away with IGTV, which had allowed longer videos to be posted by users in a more traditional format. In late July 2022, Mosseri announced that “more and more of Instagram is going to become video over time.”²⁶⁷

241. Instagram creates images and GIFs for users to incorporate into their videos and picture postings. Instagram has also acquired publishing rights to thousands of hours of music and video which it provides to its users to attach to the videos and pictures that they post on Instagram.

B. Meta intentionally encourages youth to use its services and then leverages that usage to increase revenue

242. Facebook and Instagram owe their success to dangerous services, including their underlying computer code and algorithms, and to Meta’s failure to warn the public that the platforms present serious safety risks. Meta’s tortious conduct begins before a user has viewed, let alone posted, a single scrap of content.

²⁶⁴ Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles With Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

²⁶⁵ META3047MDL-003-00030070 at META3047MDL-003-00030071.

²⁶⁶ Sheera Frenkel et al., *Instagram Struggles with Fears of Losing Its ‘Pipeline’: Young Users*, N.Y. Times (Oct. 26, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

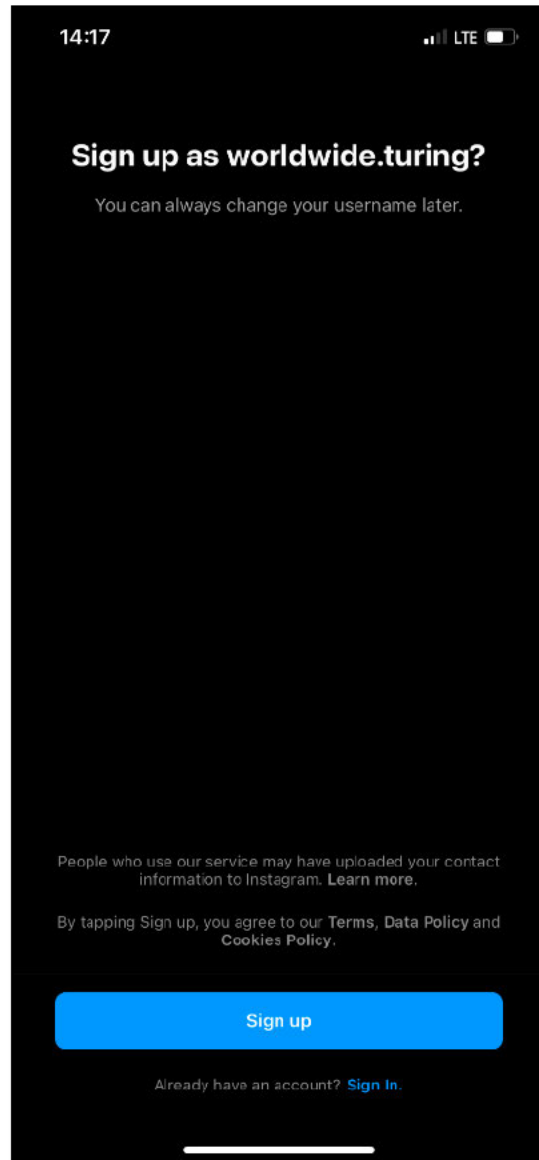
²⁶⁷ Marisa Dellatto, *Instagram Exec Defends Shift to Video Despite Complaints from Creators like Kylie Jenner*, Forbes (July 26, 2022), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/marisadellatto/2022/07/26/instagram-exec-defends-shift-to-video-despite-complaints-from-creators-like-kylie-jenner/?sh=4099badd5c6e>.

243. Meta describes the Instagram platform as a “mobile-first experience.”²⁶⁸ Indeed, the great majority of Instagram users in the U.S. access Instagram through a mobile application for either the iOS or Android operating system.

244. In order to use the Facebook or Instagram app, one must first obtain it. On a mobile device, this is accomplished by visiting a store from which the platform can be downloaded—either the Apple App Store (for iPhone users) or the Google Play Store (for Android users). Once installed onto an individual’s smartphone, they can open the app. They are then asked to create a new account by entering an email address, adding a name, and creating a password and username.

245. A prospective Instagram or Facebook user is then invited to press a colorful button that says “Sign up.” In small print above this button, the user is informed: “By tapping Sign up, you agree to our Terms, Data Policy and Cookies Policy.” The text of those policies is not presented on the sign-up page. While the words “Terms,” “Data Policy,” and “Cookies Policy” are slightly bolded, the user is not informed that they can or should click on them, or otherwise told how they can access the policies.

²⁶⁸ Yorgos Askalidis, *Launching Instagram Messaging on Desktop*, Instagram (Sept. 25, 2020), <https://about.instagram.com/blog/engineering/launching-instagram-messaging-on-desktop>.



246. Meta’s Data Policy (rebranded as a “Privacy Policy” in 2022), which applies to a raft of Meta apps, including Facebook and Instagram,²⁶⁹ indicates Meta collects a breathtaking amount of data from the users of its services, including:

- a. “[c]ontent that you create, such as posts, comments or audio;”
- b. “[c]ontent you provide through our camera feature or your camera roll settings, or through our voice-enabled features;”

²⁶⁹ Meta, *Privacy Policy*, Meta (Jan. 1 2023), <https://mbasic.facebook.com/privacy/policy/printable/#annotation-1>.

- c. “[I]nformation you’ve shared with us through device settings, such as GPS location, camera access, photos and related metadata;”
- d. “[m]essages that you send and receive, including their content;”
- e. “Metadata about content and messages;”
- f. “[t]ypes of content that you view or interact with, and how you interact with it;”
- g. “[t]he time, frequency and duration of your activities on our [platforms];”
- h. “your contacts’ information, such as their name and email address or phone number, if you choose to upload or import it from a device, such as by syncing an address book;”
- i. information about “What you’re doing on your device (such as whether our app is in the foreground or if your mouse is moving);”
- j. “device signals from different operating systems,” including “things such as nearby Bluetooth or Wi-Fi connections;”
- k. “[i]nformation about the network that you connect your device to,” which includes “The name of your mobile operator or Internet service provider (ISP), Language, Time zone, Mobile phone number, IP address, Connection speed, Information about other devices that are nearby or on your network, Wi-Fi hotspots you connect to using our [platform];” and
- l. “information from . . . third parties, including . . . [m]arketing and advertising vendors and data providers, who have the rights to provide us with your information.”

247. While the Data Policy indicates the scope of user information collected by Meta through Facebook and Instagram, it is far less forthcoming about the purposes for which this data is collected, and its consequences for younger users.

248. The Data Policy presents those goals as benign and even positive for its users—“to provide a personalized experience to you” and to “make suggestions for you such as people you may know, groups or events that you may be interested in or topics that you may want to follow.”

249. The Data Policy does not inform users that the more time individuals spend using Facebook and Instagram, the more ads Meta can deliver and the more money it can make, or that the more time users spend on Facebook and Instagram, the more Meta learns about them, and the more it can sell to advertisers the ability to micro-target highly personalized ads.²⁷⁰

250. Meta monetizes its users and their data by selling ad placements to marketers. Meta generated \$69.7 billion from advertising in 2019, more than 98% of its total revenue for the year.²⁷¹

251. Given its business model, Meta has every incentive to—and knowingly does—addict users to Facebook and Instagram. It accomplishes this through the algorithms that power its apps, which are marketed to induce compulsive and continuous scrolling for hours on end, operating in conjunction with the other dangerous features described throughout this Complaint.²⁷²

252. Meta’s Data Policy contains no warnings whatsoever that use of its platforms at the intensity and frequency targeted by Meta creates known risks of mental, emotional, and behavioral problems for children, Instagram’s key audience.

²⁷⁰ Nor does it inform users that Meta has allowed third-party apps to harvest from Facebook “vast quantities of highly sensitive user and friends permissions.” *In re Facebook, Inc.*, No. 18-md-02843-VC, ECF No. 1104 at 9 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 9, 2023). This has included an app called Sync.Me, which—according to Meta’s internal investigative documents—“had access to many ‘heavyweight’ permissions,” “including the user’s entire newsfeed, friends’ likes, friends’ statuses, and friends’ hometowns.” *In re Facebook, Inc.*, No. 18-md-02843-VC, ECF No. 1104 at 9 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 9, 2023). It has included Microstrategy, Inc., which accessed data from “16 to 20 million” Facebook users, despite only being installed by 50,000 people. *In re Facebook, Inc.*, No. 18-md-02843-VC, ECF No. 1104 at 9 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 9, 2023). And it has included one Yahoo app that made “billions of requests” for Facebook user information, including “personal information about those users’ friends, including the friends’ education histories, work histories, religions, politics, ‘about me’ sections, relationship details, and check-in posts.” *In re Facebook, Inc.*, No. 18-md-02843-VC, ECF No. 1104 at 9-10 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 9, 2023).

²⁷¹ Rishi Iyengar, *Here’s How Big Facebook’s Ad Business Really Is*, CNN (July 1, 2020), <https://www.cnn.com/2020/06/30/tech/facebook-ad-business-boycott>.

²⁷² See Christian Montag, et al., *Addictive Features of Social Media/Messenger Platforms and Freemium Games against the Background of Psychological and Economic Theories*, 16 Int’l J. Env’t Rsch. and Pub. Health 2612, 5 (July 2019), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC6679162/> (“One technique used to prolong usage time in this context is the endless scrolling/streaming feature.”); see generally, Ludmila Lupinacci, ‘Absentmindedly scrolling through nothing’: liveness and compulsory continuous connectedness in social media, 43 Media, Culture & Soc’y 273 (2021), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/epdf/10.1177/0163443720939454> (describing the ways that users use and experience social media apps).

253. Instagram’s collection and utilization of user data begins the instant a user presses “Sign Up.” At that point, Instagram prompts a new user to share a substantial amount of personal data. First, Instagram asks the user to share their personal contacts, either by syncing contacts from their phone and/or syncing their “Friends” from Facebook—“We’ll use your contacts to help you find your friends and help them find you.” Next, Instagram asks the new user to upload a photo of themselves. After that, Instagram asks the user to “Choose your interests” in order to “Get started on Instagram with account recommendations tailored to you.” And finally, Instagram invites the new user to “Follow accounts to see their photos and videos in your feed,” offering a variety of recommendations. After sign-up is completed, Instagram prompts the new user to post either a photo or a short video.

254. Meta’s collection and utilization of user data continues unabated as a new user begins to interact with its services. Meta’s tracking of behavioral data—ranging from what the user looks at, to how long they hover over certain images, to what advertisements they click on or ignore—helps Meta build out a comprehensive and unique fingerprint of the user’s identity. As the user continues to use the service, Meta’s algorithm works silently in the background to refine this fingerprint, by continuously monitoring and measuring patterns in the user’s behavior. Meta’s algorithm is sophisticated enough that it can leverage existing data to draw educated inferences about even the user behavior it does not track firsthand. Meta’s comprehensive data collection allows it to target and influence its users in order to increase their “engagement” with its apps.

255. Meta’s collection and analysis of user data allows it to assemble virtual dossiers on its users, covering hundreds if not thousands of user-specific data segments. This, in turn, allows advertisers to micro-target marketing and advertising dollars to very specific categories of users, who can be segregated into pools or lists using Meta’s data segments. Only a fraction of these data

segments come from content knowingly designated by users for publication or explicitly provided by users in their account profiles. Many of these data segments are collected by Meta through covert surveillance of each user's activity while using the service and when logged off the service, including behavioral surveillance that users are unaware of, like navigation paths, watch time, and hover time. Essentially, the larger Meta's user database grows, the more time the users spend on the database, and the more detailed information that Meta can extract from its users, the more money it makes.

256. Currently, advertisers can target Instagram and Facebook ads to young people based on age, gender, and location.²⁷³ According to U.S.-based non-profit Fairplay, Meta did not actually cease collecting data from teens for advertising in July 2021, as Meta has claimed.²⁷⁴

257. Meta clearly understands the revenue and growth potential presented by its youngest users, and it is desperate to retain them. Documents obtained by *The New York Times* indicate, that since 2018, almost all of Instagram's \$390 million global marketing budget has gone towards showing ads to teenagers.²⁷⁵

258. Before the rise of Instagram, Facebook was the social media service by which Meta targeted young users. Until recently, this targeting was devastatingly effective. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁷⁶

259. While the number of teen Facebook users has declined in recent years, Facebook remains critical to Meta's strategy towards young users. [REDACTED]

²⁷³ Andrea Vittorio, *Meta's Ad-Targeting to Teens Draws Advocacy Group Opposition*, Bloomberg (Nov. 16, 2021), <https://news.bloomberglaw.com/privacy-and-data-security/metas-ad-targeting-to-teens-draws-advocacy-group-opposition>.

²⁷⁴ Andrea Vittorio, *Meta's Ad-Targeting to Teens Draws Advocacy Group Opposition*, Bloomberg (Nov. 16, 2021), <https://news.bloomberglaw.com/privacy-and-data-security/metas-ad-targeting-to-teens-draws-advocacy-group-opposition>.

²⁷⁵ Sheera Frenkel, et al, *Instagram Struggles With Fears of Losing Its 'Pipeline': Young Users* N.Y. Times (Oct. 16, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/10/16/technology/instagram-teens.html>.

²⁷⁶ META3047MDL-003-00171899 at META3047MDL-003-00171904.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁷⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁷⁸

260. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁷⁹ The centerpiece of these efforts is Messenger Kids (“MK”).²⁸⁰ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁸¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁸² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁸³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁸⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

²⁷⁷ META3047MDL-003-00171899 at META3047MDL-003-00171909.

²⁷⁸ META3047MDL-003-00003731 at META3047MDL-003-00003732.

²⁷⁹ Haugen_00017238 at Haugen_00017238.

²⁸⁰ Nick Stat, *Facebook launches a version of Messenger for young children*, The Verge (December 4, 2022) <https://www.theverge.com/2017/12/4/16725494/facebook-messenger-kids-app-launch-ios-iphone-preview>.

²⁸¹ Haugen_00023087 at Haugen_00023087.

²⁸² Haugen_00023087 at Haugen_00023088, Haugen_00023097.

²⁸³ Haugen_00023087 at Haugen_00023090.

²⁸⁴ Haugen_00023066 at Haugen_00023066.

[REDACTED]²⁸⁵ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

261. [REDACTED] Although
Meta employees publicly denied using children as “guinea pigs” to develop platform features,

[REDACTED]²⁸⁶ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]²⁸⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁸⁸ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]²⁸⁹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁹⁰ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁹¹

262. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁹² [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁹³ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

²⁸⁵ Haugen_00023066 at Haugen_00023085.

²⁸⁶ John Twomey, *Molly Russell Inquest Latest: Teenager Viewed Suicide Videos of ‘Most Distressing Nature’*, Express (Sept. 23, 2022), <https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/1673461/Molly-Russell-inquest-latest-Teenager-suicide-videos-instagram>.

²⁸⁷ [REDACTED] Haugen_00024450 at Haugen_00024454.

²⁸⁸ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023850.

²⁸⁹ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023888.

²⁹⁰ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023886.

²⁹¹ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023888.

²⁹² Haugen_00024450 at Haugen_00024450.

²⁹³ Haugen_00024450 at Haugen_00024466.

[REDACTED]²⁹⁴

263. Meta’s interest, efforts, and success in expanding the presence of its services in children’s lives is clear. Given the delicate, developing nature of the young brain and Meta’s creation of social media services marketed to promote repetitive, compulsive use, it is not surprising that American society is now grappling with the ramifications of Meta’s growth-at-any-cost approach. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]²⁹⁵

264. Meta has studied features from its other services to make Instagram as attractive and addictive as possible to young users. Meta’s flagship platform Facebook was the original testing ground for many of Instagram’s addicting and otherwise dangerous features, which the two platforms share to this day. This feature overlap is no accident: it represents a conscious strategy adopted by Meta to keep social media users hooked on its “family” of services for their entire lives.

265. From the beginning, both the Facebook and Instagram services have exploited vulnerabilities in human psychology to addict users and maximize user time and engagement. Facebook’s first President, Sean Parker, summed up the devastating impact of this service in a 2017 interview:

God only knows what it’s doing to our children’s brains. . . . The thought process that went into building these applications, Facebook being the first of them, . . . was all about: ‘How do we consume as much of your time and conscious attention as possible?’ . . . And that means that we need to sort of give you a little dopamine hit every once in a while, because someone liked or commented on a photo or a post And that’s going to get you to contribute more content, and that’s going to get you . . . more likes and comments. .

²⁹⁴ Haugen_00024450 at Haugen_00024466.

²⁹⁵ Haugen_00000934 at Haugen_00000934.

. . . It's a social-validation feedback loop . . . exactly the kind of thing that a hacker like myself would come up with, because you're exploiting a vulnerability in human psychology. . . . The inventors, creators — it's me, it's Mark [Zuckerberg], it's Kevin Systrom on Instagram, it's all of these people — understood this consciously. And we did it anyway.²⁹⁶

Tellingly, many tech leaders, including individuals with inside knowledge of the defects of Meta's social media platforms, either ban or severely limit their own children's access to screen time and social media.²⁹⁷ Such leaders in the field include Tim Cook and former Facebook executives Tim Kendall and Chamath Palihapitiya.²⁹⁸

C. Meta intentionally marketed service features to addict children and adolescents.

266. Meta Facebook and Instagram has harmful dangerous effects that users encounter at every stage of interaction with the service. These dangers which have harmed adolescents that use the platforms, include but are not limited to: (a) recommendation algorithms, fueled by extensive data collection, which are marketed to promote use in quantities and frequency harmful to adolescents; (b) platform features that prey upon children's desire for validation and need for social comparison; (c) platform features that are marketed to create harmful loops of repetitive and excessive platform usage; (d) lack of effective mechanisms, despite having the ability to implement them, to restrict children's usage of the platforms; (d) inadequate parental controls, and

²⁹⁶ Mike Allen, *Sean Parker unloads on Facebook: "God only knows what it's doing to our children's brains,"* Axios (Nov. 9, 2017), <https://www.axios.com/2017/12/15/sean-parker-unloads-on-facebook-god-only-knows-what-its-doing-to-our-childrens-brains-1513306792>.

²⁹⁷ Samuel Gibbs, *Apple's Tim Cook: "I Don't Want My Nephew on a Social Network"*, The Guardian (Jan. 19, 2018), <https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2018/jan/19/tim-cook-i-dont-want-my-nephew-on-a-social-network#:~:text=The%20head%20of%20Apple%2C%20Tim,it%20was%20announced%20on%20Friday>; James Vincent, *Former Facebook Exec Says Social Media is Ripping Apart Society*, The Verge (Dec. 11, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/12/11/16761016/former-facebook-exec-ripping-apart-society>.

²⁹⁸ Samuel Gibbs, *Apple's Tim Cook: "I Don't Want My Nephew on a Social Network"*, The Guardian (Jan. 19, 2018), <https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2018/jan/19/tim-cook-i-dont-want-my-nephew-on-a-social-network#:~:text=The%20head%20of%20Apple%2C%20Tim,it%20was%20announced%20on%20Friday>; James Vincent, *Former Facebook Exec Says Social Media is Ripping Apart Society*, The Verge (Dec. 11, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/12/11/16761016/former-facebook-exec-ripping-apart-society>.

facilitation of unsupervised use of the platforms; and (e) intentionally placed obstacles to discourage cessation of use of the services.

267. Facebook and Instagram have been marketed, maintained, and constantly updated by one of the world's most wealthy, powerful, and sophisticated corporations. Large teams of expert data scientists, user experience (“UX”) researchers, and similar professionals have spent years fine-tuning these services to addict users. Every aspect of the platform interfaces, each layer of their subsurface algorithms and systems, and each line of underlying code has been crafted by brilliant minds. Every detail—the color of platform icons, the placement of buttons within the interface, the timing of notifications, etc.—increase the frequency and length of use sessions. Therefore, it is impractical to create a comprehensive list of addictive dangers until in-depth discovery occurs. Many service features, such as the inner workings of Meta's algorithms, are secret and unobservable to users. Discovery during this litigation will reveal additional detail about the dangerous, addictive, and harmful design of Meta's platforms.

1. Facebook's and Instagram's algorithms maximize engagement, promoting use at levels and frequency that is harmful to kids.

268. Meta has invested its vast resources to intentionally design Facebook and Instagram to be addictive to adolescents, all the while concealing these facts from its users and the public.

269. In its original form, Meta's Facebook and Instagram algorithms ranked chronologically, meaning that a particular user's feed was organized according to when content was posted or sent by the people the user followed. In 2009, Meta did away with Facebook's chronological feed in favor of engagement-based ranking; in 2016, it did the same on Instagram. This “engagement-based” system meant that posts that received the most likes and comments were highlighted first for users. But facing declining engagement, Meta redesigned its algorithms once again in or around early 2018. This change prioritized “meaningful social interaction” (“MSI”),

with the goal of showing users content with which they were more likely to engage. The MSI-oriented algorithms purportedly emphasize the interactions of users' connections; e.g., likes and comments, and give greater significance to the interactions of connections that appear to be closest to users. Meta's current algorithms consider a post's likes, shares, and comments, as well as a respective user's past interactions with posts with similar characteristics, and displays the post in the user's feed if it meets these and certain other benchmarks.

270. While Meta has publicly attempted to cast MSI as making time spent on its platforms more "meaningful," MSI was actually just another way for Meta to increase user engagement on Instagram and Facebook. While the feature increases the likelihood that an interaction will be "meaningful" by Meta's definition—more likes, comments, and interactions—it does not consider whether recommended content is "meaningful" to the user. This sets up users who may have reacted negatively to upsetting or dangerous posts to see more of the same. That, in turn, can lead to what [REDACTED]²⁹⁹—with negative reactions leading the algorithm to present more posts that generate more negative reactions.

271. In algorithmically generating users' feeds, Meta draws upon the vast amount of data it collects about and from its users. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰⁰ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

²⁹⁹ META3047MDL-003-00068860 at META3047MDL-003-00068861.

³⁰⁰ [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] Haugen_00002372 at Haugen_00002374.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰¹

272. Much of what Meta shows users is content that they did not sign up for. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰³

273. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁰⁵

274. Through these algorithms, Meta intentionally supplants the content that users have elected to see with content that it believes will drive more use and engagement. Thus, the services that Meta touts as “[g]iv[ing] people the power to build community and bring[ing] the world closer

³⁰¹ Haugen_00006798 at Haugen_00006799 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00024997 at Haugen_00024997 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]; Haugen_00024997 at
Haugen_00024998 [REDACTED];
Haugen_00003739 at Haugen_00003740 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED].

³⁰² Haugen_00021247 at Haugen_000212448; *see also* Haugen_00006798 at Haugen_00006799 [REDACTED]
[REDACTED].

³⁰³ Haugen_00021247 at Haugen_000212448.

³⁰⁴ Haugen_00021247 at Haugen_00021251.

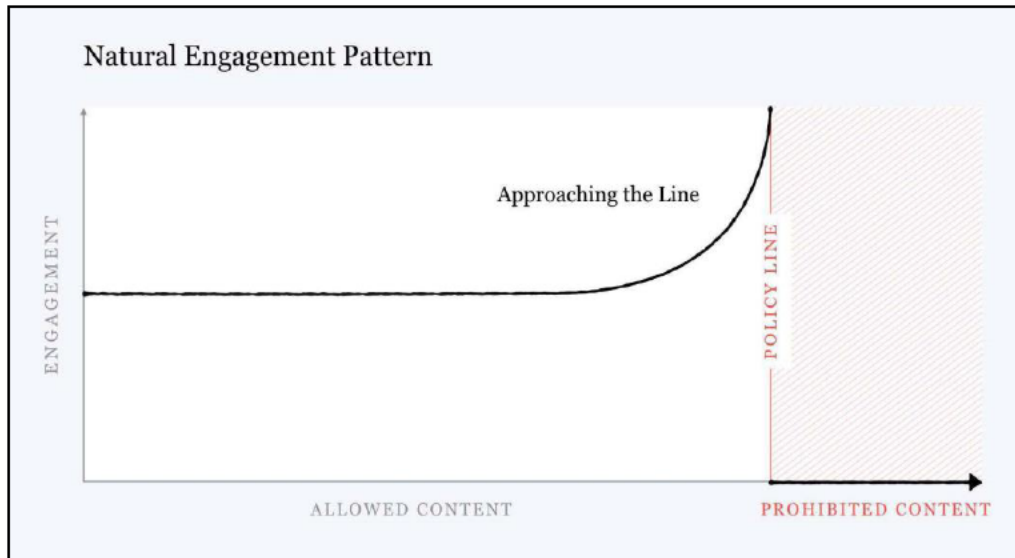
³⁰⁵ Haugen_00021247 at Haugen_00021251.

together,” are actually designed in a way that prioritizes not social connection but use at all costs, even to the detriment of the health and safety of young people.³⁰⁶ The result, for Meta, is an increase in its bottom line. The result for young users is that it is so addictive that they return again and again, even when the push posts they’re not interested in.

275. Meta knew that its engagement-based ranking algorithm (and its subsequent, iterative MSI ranking algorithm) was structured in a way that mean that content which produces intense reactions (i.e., strong engagement) triggers amplification by the apps. This propels users into the most reactive experiences, favoring posts that generate engagement because they are extreme in nature. Zuckerberg publicly recognized this in a 2018 post, in which he demonstrated the correlation between engagement and sensational content that is so extreme that it impinges upon Meta’s own ethical limits, with the following chart:³⁰⁷ While Zuckerberg went on to claim that Meta had designed its algorithms to avoid this natural propensity of engagement-based algorithms, his claim to the public is belied by the extensive internal and external research indicating Meta’s services did amplify extreme material.

³⁰⁶ Meta, *Mission Statement*, Meta, <https://about.meta.com/company-info/>.

³⁰⁷ Mark Zuckerberg, *A Blueprint for Content Governance and Enforcement*, Facebook, <https://www.facebook.com/notes/751449002072082/>.



276. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] ³⁰⁸

277. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] ³⁰⁹ [REDACTED]

³⁰⁸ Haugen_00001033 at Haugen_00001033.

³⁰⁹ Haugen_00017177 at Haugen_00017177.

Meta also tracks and utilizes data from various other sources, such as a user's off-platform activities and the activities on websites that contain Facebook or Instagram like or share buttons.³¹⁰

278. Meta's algorithmic ranking is utilized in a variety of platform features that are designed by Meta to maximize user engagement.

279. For example, the Instagram platform consists primarily of a never-ending and user-specific Feed, which Instagram's data-driven algorithms generate for each user. In the app's "Home" pane, this feed includes (but is not limited to) photos and videos posted by Instagram users that the user has elected to "follow," as well as recommended photos and videos. In the app's "Explore" pane, the feed consists almost exclusively of photos and videos from users the user has *not* elected to "follow." In both cases, Instagram's algorithms evaluate each user's data to predict what material will maximize their attention and time spent using the platform, irrespective of what the user wants to see.

280. Other "recommendation" features that are similarly algorithmically powered include Facebook's Newsfeed, Instagram's Feed, Instagram Reels, Facebook Reels, Facebook Watch (and its "For You" page), Accounts to Follow, People You May Know (introductions to persons with common connections or backgrounds), Groups You Should Join, and Discover (recommendations for Meta groups to join).

³¹⁰ Allen St. John, *How Facebook Tracks You, Even When You're Not on Facebook*, Consumer Reports (April 11, 2018), <https://www.consumerreports.org/privacy/how-facebook-tracks-you-even-when-youre-not-on-facebook-a7977954071/>.

281. These platform features work in combination to create and maintain a user’s “flow-state”: a hyper-focused, hypnotic state, where bodily movements are reflexive and the user is totally immersed in smoothly rotating through aspects of the social media service.³¹¹

282. They also create a phenomenon that Meta employees refer to [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³¹² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³¹³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³¹⁴ Because Meta’s algorithm prioritizes engagement above all else, any harmful feeling or impulse that users have are amplified by Instagram—which becomes an echo chamber screaming their most upsetting thoughts back at them.

283. This phenomenon was cast into vivid relief when 14 year-old Molly Russell took her own life after viewing reams of content related to suicide, self-injury, and depression on Instagram and several other services.³¹⁵ During an official inquest investigating the role that social media services played in her death, a Meta executive said that such content was “safe” for children to see.³¹⁶ The coroner rejected this claim, finding instead that Molly “died from an act of self-harm

³¹¹ See e.g., *What Makes TikTok so Addictive?: An Analysis of the Mechanisms Underlying the World’s Latest Social Media Craze*, Brown Undergraduate J. of Pub. Health (2021), <https://sites.brown.edu/publichealthjournal/2021/12/13/tiktok/> (describing how IVR and infinite scrolling may induce a flow state in users).

³¹² META3047MDL-003-00121808 at META3047MDL-003-00121808. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] See also META3047MDL-003-00077939 at META3047MDL-003-00077939.

³¹³ META3047MDL-003-00121808 at META3047MDL-003-00121808.

³¹⁴ META3047MDL-003-00068863 at META3047MDL-003-00068905, META3047MDL-003-00068878; see also META3047MDL-003-00042548 [REDACTED]

³¹⁵ Dan Milmo, *Social Media Firms ‘Monetising Misery’, Says Molly Russell’s Father After Inquest*, The Guardian (Sept. 20, 2022), <https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2022/sep/30/molly-russell-died-while-suffering-negative-effects-of-online-content-rules-coroner>.

³¹⁶ Ryan Merrifield, *Molly Russell Inquest: Instagram Boss Says Suicidal Posts Shouldn’t Be Banned From App*, The Mirror (Sept. 26, 2022), <https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/molly-russell-inquest-instagram-boss-28085269>.

whilst suffering from depression and the negative effects of on-line content” that she had not sought out, but that the platforms’ algorithms had pushed on her.³¹⁷ “The platform operated in such a way using algorithms as to result, in some circumstances, of binge periods of images, video clips and text some of which were selected and provided without Molly requesting them. These binge periods ... are likely to have had a negative effect on Molly.... In some cases, the content was particularly graphic, tending to portray self-harm and suicide as an inevitable consequence of a condition that could not be recovered from. The sites normalised her condition focusing on a limited and irrational view without any counterbalance of normality.”³¹⁸ The coroner further observed that “[t]here was no age verification when signing up to the on-line platform” and that Molly’s parents “did not have access, to the material being viewed or any control over that material.”³¹⁹

284. Disturbingly, years before Meta sent an executive to the inquest to tout its services as “safe,” Meta had conducted internal research which warned that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³²⁰

285. Despite Molly’s death, [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] the company did nothing to stop harm to its young users. [REDACTED]

³¹⁷ Ryan Merrifield, *Molly Russell Inquest: Instagram Boss Says Suicidal Posts Shouldn’t Be Banned From App*, The Mirror (Sept. 26, 2022), <https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/molly-russell-inquest-instagram-boss-28085269>.

³¹⁸ Andrew Walker, H.M. Coroner, *Regulation 28 Report to Prevent Future Deaths 2* (Oct. 13, 2022), https://www.judiciary.uk/wp-content/uploads/2022/10/Molly-Russell-Prevention-of-future-deaths-report-2022-0315_Published.pdf.

³¹⁹ Andrew Walker, H.M. Coroner, *Regulation 28 Report to Prevent Future Deaths 2* (Oct. 13, 2022), https://www.judiciary.uk/wp-content/uploads/2022/10/Molly-Russell-Prevention-of-future-deaths-report-2022-0315_Published.pdf.

³²⁰ META3047MDL-003-00043617 at META3047MDL-003-00043644.

321

322

323

2. Facebook’s and Instagram’s user interfaces are designed to create addictive engagement.

286. To further drive user engagement (and thereby drive data collection and advertising revenue), Facebook and Instagram also utilize a series of design features that are carefully calibrated to exploit users’ neurobiology. These features work in tandem with algorithmic ranking to promote addictive engagement. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³²⁴ But it does not warn prospective or current users about the following features or their safety risks, which are particularly harmful to adolescents.

287. *First*, Meta programs IVR into its services. Behavioral training via intermittent rewards keeps users endlessly scrolling in search of a dopamine release, oftentimes despite their desire to put their phone down and move onto other activities. Children, who are less likely to have adequate impulse control than adults, are more susceptible to being drawn into this engineered “flow state” and more likely to grow dependent on Facebook or Instagram.

288. *Second*, Facebook and Instagram utilize “Likes” to control the release of dopamine in children. This feature, which Meta created for Facebook and “introduced ... to the world” in 2010, allows users to indicate that they “Like” a post and visibly tallies the number of “Likes” any

³²¹ META3047MDL-003-00077939; *see also* META3047MDL-003-00068860 at *60 [REDACTED]; META3047MDL-003-00087111 at 7112 [REDACTED]

³²² META3047MDL-003-00077939.

³²³ META3047MDL-003-00077939.

³²⁴ META3047MDL-003-00093303.

given post has earned.³²⁵ Instagram launched in 2010 with the like feature built-in—a user can “Like” a post simply by tapping a heart-shaped button.

289. As with a slot machine, users never know when a like will come. This conditions them to stay on the app. But it also exacerbates issues of social comparison and feedback seeking, creating detrimental effects on adolescent physical and mental health. Indeed, Meta knows [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³²⁶ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³²⁷

290. Despite this knowledge, Meta has expanded the likes feature in both Facebook and Instagram. In December 2016, Meta began allowing users to like comments, not just posts. In February 2022, Meta began allowing users to “Like” Instagram Stories.³²⁸ Expanding the like feature has intensified and multiplied the body of feedback that teen users receive (or don’t receive) on their posts, preying on their desire to seek validation through comparison with others.

291. Meta’s research [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³²⁹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³³⁰

292. For that reason—despite its ability to alleviate the negative impact of likes on younger users—Meta chose only to implement half-measures. Meta created the option for users to

³²⁵ Ray C. He, *Introducing new Like and Share Buttons*, Meta (Nov. 6, 2013),

<https://developers.facebook.com/blog/post/2013/11/06/introducing-new-like-and-share-buttons/>.

³²⁶ See Haugen_00008207 at Haugen_00008210 [REDACTED]

³²⁷ Haugen_00008207 at Haugen_00008232.

³²⁸ Jhinuk Sen, *Instagram is adding Likes to Stories so it doesn’t clog up people’s inboxes*, Business Today (Feb. 15, 2022), <https://www.businesstoday.in/technology/news/story/instagram-is-adding-likes-to-stories-so-it-doesnt-clog-up-peoples-inboxes-322661-2022-02-15>.

³²⁹ Haugen_00008207 at Haugen_00008232.

³³⁰ Haugen_00008207 at Haugen_00008250.

hide like counts in May 2021, but it made this an optional setting left off by default.³³¹ Moreover, the number of likes remain visible to the poster of the content. These changes stop short of resolving the issue of negative social comparison that these score-keeping features inflict.

293. *Third*, Meta has designed its video features in several ways geared to maximizing users' flow state and keeping them immersed in its services for longer periods of time. Video clips on Facebook Reels and Instagram Reels automatically play as a user scrolls and automatically restart once they conclude. Reels cannot be paused and tapping on the video will simply mute its audio. In addition, Meta imposes limits on the length of video content on Reels (currently 90 seconds, and at times as short as 15 seconds). These limits ensure that users do not become bored by long videos and end their sessions.

294. Meta designed the comment features of Reels to minimize any disruption to users' heightened flow state. The interface of Reels displays the "Like," "Comment," "Save," and "Share" buttons on the bottom right of the screen. This placement avoids the milliseconds of delay or discomfort that could disrupt the flow state of right-handed users if placed elsewhere on the screen. Furthermore, these buttons are overlaid on top of the continuously playing clips, to eliminate any temporal or visual interruption during which a user might evaluate whether to continue using the platform. Likewise, when a user taps to view the comments on a Reel, the video's audio and the top quarter of the video continue to play behind the comments section. Again, this design feature keeps the user's attention on the feed.

295. In keeping with its study of IVR, Meta knows when to strategically interrupt a user's flow. Occasionally, while a video is playing, a comment from the video will appear on the bottom of the screen, even without the user tapping to view the comments section. These comments

³³¹ Meta, *Giving People More Control on Instagram and Facebook* (May 26, 2021), <https://about.fb.com/news/2021/05/giving-people-more-control/>.

are selected, displayed, and timed intentionally, to retain a user's attention by engaging with the comments section.

296. *Fourth*, Meta carefully (and dangerously) calibrates the notifications it sends outside of the Facebook and Instagram apps, to maximize success in drawing back users who are not presently using the service. By default, Facebook and Instagram notify users through text and email about activity that might be of interest, which prompts users to open and reengage with the platforms. However, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³³² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³³³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³³⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³³⁵ [REDACTED]³³⁶

297. Meta's studied manipulation of user engagement through notifications is particularly detrimental to teenagers, who lack impulse control and crave social rewards, and who are therefore more susceptible to falling into compulsive patterns of service use. Those harms are

³³² *Clickbait*, Merriam-Webster Dictionary, <https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/clickbait>.

³³³ Haugen_00010114 at Haugen_00010117.

³³⁴ Haugen_00010114 at Haugen_00010117.

³³⁵ See Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016899-902.

³³⁶ See Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016913 [REDACTED]
Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016915- Haugen_00016916 [REDACTED]

compounded by the fact that Meta sends push notifications in the middle of the night, prompting children to re-engage with Instagram and Facebook the apps when they should be sleeping. Disturbed and insufficient sleep is associated with poor health outcomes.³³⁷

298. *Fifth*, the “Stories” feature of both Facebook and Instagram is dangerously designed to create artificial urgency so that users return to the apps. “Stories” was added by Meta in response to the growing popularity of Snapchat with teenagers in 2016. “Stories” appear at the top of a user’s home page upon opening the app and are available to view for only 24 hours, after which they disappear. This creates pressure to use the platform daily, or else risk missing out on dopamine-causing stimuli or social interactions. This feature is particularly addicting to adolescent users, who feel increased social pressure to view all their contact’s stories each day before the content disappears, thus increasing their compulsive usage and potential addiction to the platform.³³⁸ The ephemeral nature of disappearing content is a ploy intended to inspire urgent perusal, and it works.³³⁹

299. *Sixth*, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁰ One researcher put the matter directly in April 2021: [REDACTED]

³³⁷ Nat’l Inst. of Mental Health, *The Teen Brain: Still Under Construction* 6 (2011), http://www.ncdsv.org/images/NIMH_TeenBrainStillUnderConstruction_2011.pdf.

³³⁸ Sarah Lempa, *Why Are Instagram Stories So Addicting?*, Healthline (April 5, 2021), <https://www.healthline.com/health/why-are-instagram-stories-so-addicting#The-story-behind-the-Stories>.

³³⁹ Madiha Jamal, *Ephemeral Content — The Future of Social Media Marketing*, Better Marketing (March 2, 2021), <https://bettermarketing.pub/ephemeral-content-the-future-of-social-media-marketing-996d265916c2#:~:text=Ephemeral%20content%20relates%20to%20the,WhatsApp%20Stories%2C%20and%20LinkedIn%20Stories>.

³⁴⁰ See META3047MDL-003-00068863 at META3047MDL-003-00068905 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴¹

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴²

300. All of the above defects, in addition to the Instagram-specific defects discussed in the section that follows, interact with and compound one another to make Meta's services addictive and harmful for kids.

301. Meta has long been aware of this dangerous and toxic brew.

302. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴³

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁴

[REDACTED]³⁴⁵

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁶

³⁴¹ META3047MDL-003-00184585 at META3047MDL-003-00184587.

³⁴² META3047MDL-003-00087111 at 7112

³⁴³ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016895. [REDACTED]

³⁴⁴ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016898.

³⁴⁵ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016898.

³⁴⁶ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016899-Haugen_00016802.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁸ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁴⁹

303. [REDACTED]³⁵⁰

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵³

304. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵⁵

³⁴⁷ Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021690.

³⁴⁸ Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021692.

³⁴⁹ Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021697.

³⁵⁰ Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021699.

³⁵¹ Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021697.

³⁵² Haugen_00021690 at Haugen_00021695-Haugen_00021697.

³⁵³ META3047MDL-003-00157036 at META3047MDL-003-00157036.

³⁵⁴ Haugen_00017177 at Haugen_00017181.

³⁵⁵ Haugen_00017177 at Haugen_00017187.

305. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵⁶ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵⁷

Another Meta employee was clear-eyed that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]³⁵⁸

³⁵⁶ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017128, Haugen_00017132.

³⁵⁷ Haugen_00010114 at Haugen_00010127.

³⁵⁸ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017171.

306. In January 2021, another Meta employee wrote: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁵⁹

307. Meta failed to invest in adequate tools to limit the harm their services inflicted on users. As one employee candid put it: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁶⁰ Nonetheless, Meta publicly presented certain of these tools as solutions, [REDACTED]. For example, Meta offered to its users a feature that purported to show how much time users had spent on Instagram. And [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁶¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁶²

308. At the end of the day, Meta's failure to prevent compulsive use by children, and the harms resulting therefrom, are a simple function of its misplaced priorities. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

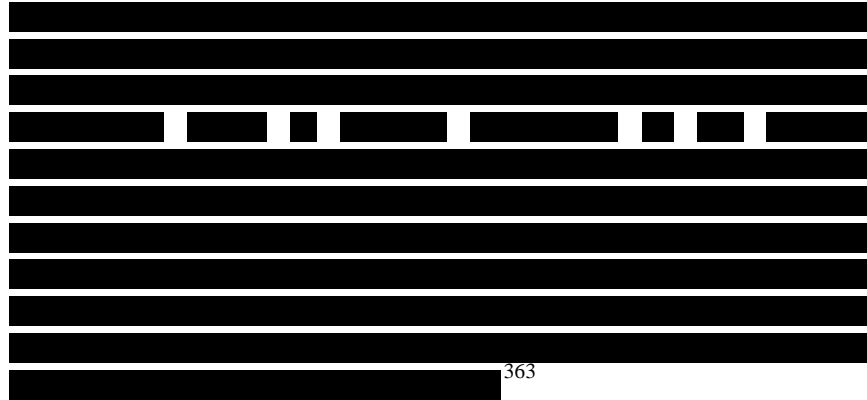
[REDACTED]

³⁵⁹ META3047MDL-003-00161686 at META3047MDL-003-00161686.

³⁶⁰ META3047MDL-003-00157036 at META3047MDL-003-00157036.

³⁶¹ META3047MDL-003-00157036 at META3047MDL-003-00157036.

³⁶² META3047MDL-003-00157133 at META3047MDL-003-00157133.



309. Meta’s decision to hook teenage users by rewiring their brains has not aged well for some of its former employees. Chamath Palihapitiya, the former Vice President of User Growth at Facebook, admitted that he feels “tremendous guilt” about his contributions to social media, saying “[t]he short-term, dopamine-driven feedback loops that we have created are destroying how society works.”³⁶⁴

3. Instagram’s dangerous service features cause negative appearance comparison and social comparison

310. Meta has known since at least 2018 that Instagram has a corrosive effect on the well-being of pre-teen and teenage users.³⁶⁵

311. Meta has an internal research team comprised of employees with expertise in, *inter alia*, computer science, psychology, and quantitative and qualitative analysis. From 2019 to 2021, this team conducted a “teen mental health deep dive” which included focus groups, diary studies, and online surveys. One large-scale study paired a survey of tens of thousands of Instagram users








³⁶³ Haugen_00021096 at Haugen_00021097-Haugen_0002110 (emphasis omitted).

³⁶⁴ Amy B. Wang, *Former Facebook VP says social media is destroying society with ‘dopamine-driven feedback loops’*, Wash. Post (Dec. 12, 2017), <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2017/12/12/former-facebook-vp-says-social-media-is-destroying-society-with-dopamine-driven-feedback-loops/>.

³⁶⁵ See, e.g., Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00146240 at META3047MDL-003-00146256.

with data about the time each respondent spent on Instagram and the type of content they viewed.³⁶⁶

312. The evidence collected by Meta’s research team is damning. Among other findings, Defendants’ researchers learned that:

- a. 41% of teen users of Instagram in the U.S. and U.K. who reported feeling “unattractive” said the feeling began while using the platform;³⁶⁷
- b. 32% of teenage girls said that when they felt bad about their bodies, Instagram made them feel worse;³⁶⁸
- c.  ³⁶⁹
- d. 
 ³⁷⁰
- e. One in five teens say that Instagram makes them feel worse about themselves;³⁷¹
- f. 
 ³⁷²
- g. 
 ³⁷³

³⁶⁶ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; Haugen_00017069; META3047MDL-003-00000029.

³⁶⁷ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000043.

³⁶⁸ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019226; META3047MDL-003-00001846 at META3047MDL-003-00001852.

³⁶⁹ Haugen_00016699 at Haugen_00016707.

³⁷⁰ Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019226.

³⁷¹ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls, Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017091; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000049.

³⁷² Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019226.

³⁷³ Haugen_00020135 at Haugen_00020162.

- h. About a quarter of teens who reported feeling “not good enough” said the feeling started on Instagram;³⁷⁴
- i. Many teens said Instagram undermined their confidence in the strength of their friendships;³⁷⁵
- j. Teenagers who struggle with mental health say that Instagram worsens those problems;³⁷⁶
- k. “Teens blame Instagram for increases in the rates of anxiety and depression among teens” in recent years—a response that was unprompted and consistent across all groups;³⁷⁷
- l. Among teens who reported suicidal thoughts, 13% of British users and 6% of American users traced the desire to kill themselves to Instagram;³⁷⁸ and
- m. [REDACTED]³⁷⁹

313. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸⁰ [REDACTED]

³⁷⁴ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000043.

³⁷⁵ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000043.

³⁷⁶ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000054.

³⁷⁷ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000052.

³⁷⁸ Georgia Wells, Jeff Horwitz, Deepa Seetharaman, *Facebook Knows Instagram is Toxic for Teen Girls*, *Company Documents Show*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 14, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/facebook-knows-instagram-is-toxic-for-teen-girls-company-documents-show-11631620739>; META3047MDL-003-00000029 at META3047MDL-003-00000043.

³⁷⁹ Haugen_00016699 at Haugen_00016707.

³⁸⁰ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015987.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸¹

314. Children are developmentally unprepared for the psychological ramifications of peer judgment and online comparisons.

315. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸⁵

316. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁸⁶ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

³⁸¹ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015989.

³⁸² Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015985.

³⁸³ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015990.

³⁸⁴ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015983.

³⁸⁵ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015992.

³⁸⁶ Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015996.

389

387 Haugen_00002527 at Haugen_00002555.
388 META3047MDL-003-00159559 at META3047MDL-003-00159560.
389 Haugen_00017263 at Haugen_00017263.
390 T. Mustafa, an 'Instagram Vs Reality' filter is showing how toxic photo editing can be, Metro (April 2021); <https://metro.co.uk/2021/04/30/an-instagram-vs-reality-tool-is-showing-how-toxic-filters-can-be-14498265/>; Mariska Kleemans, Serena Daalman, Ilana Carbaat & Doeschka Anschütz (2018) *Picture Perfect: The Direct Effect of Manipulated Instagram Photos on Body Image in Adolescent Girls*, 21 Media Psychology 93, 93-110 (2018), <https://www.tandfonline.com/doi/pdf/10.1080/15213269.2016.1257392>.

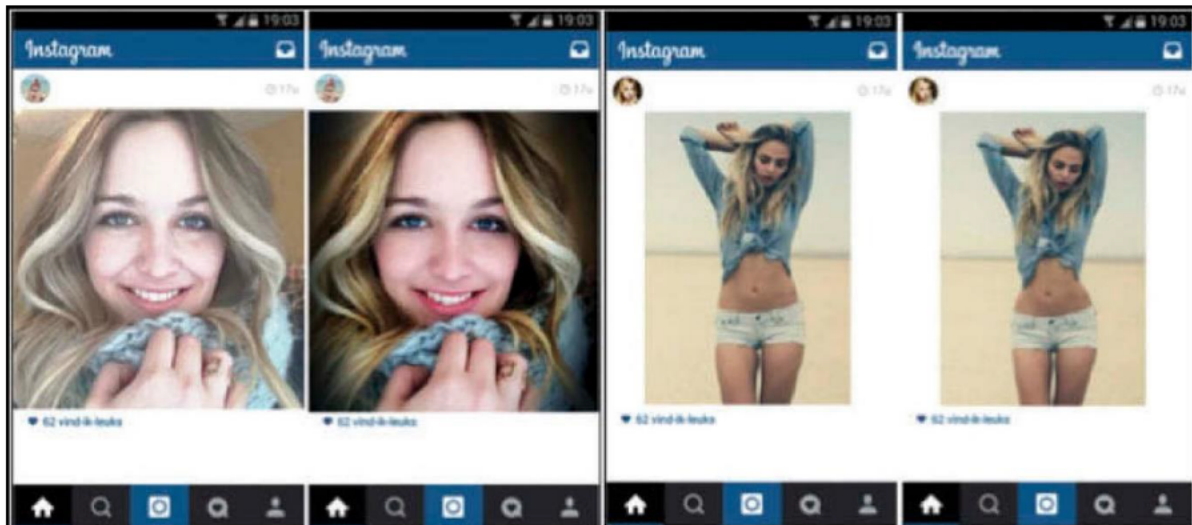


Figure 1. Examples of original versus manipulated Instagram photos emphasizing face, skin, and hair (left), or body (right).

These filters have harmed adolescent users in multiple ways, both independently and in concert with Instagram’s other dangerous features.³⁹¹

319. First, the easy accessibility of filters, combined with features such as “Likes,” encourage adolescents to artificially change their appearances.³⁹² As noted, adolescents naturally seek social validation. When they notice increased interaction and favorable responses to their filter-edited photos (more “Likes” and comments”), many are led to believe they are only attractive when their images are edited.³⁹³ These young people begin to prefer how they look using filters, not as they appear naturally.³⁹⁴ In a 2016 study, 52% of girls said they use image filters every day,

³⁹¹ Anna Haines, *From ‘Instagram Face’ To ‘Snapchat Dysmorphia’: How Beauty Filters Are Changing The Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c32eb144eff>.

³⁹² Tate Ryan-Mosley, *Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way Young Girls See Themselves*, MIT Tech. Rev. (Apr. 2, 2021), <https://www.technologyreview.com/2021/04/02/1021635/beauty-filters-young-girls-augmented-reality-social-media/amp/>.

³⁹³ Tate Ryan-Mosley, *Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way Young Girls See Themselves*, MIT Tech. Rev. (Apr. 2, 2021), <https://www.technologyreview.com/2021/04/02/1021635/beauty-filters-young-girls-augmented-reality-social-media/amp/>.

³⁹⁴ Poojah Shah, *How Social Media Filters Are Affecting Youth*, Parents (Apr. 28, 2022), <https://www.parents.com/kids/health/childrens-mental-health/how-social-media-filters-are-affecting-youth/>.

and 80% have used an app to change their appearance before age 13.³⁹⁵ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]³⁹⁶ [REDACTED]³⁹⁷

Pictures must be “Instagrammable” to be worthy of posting.

320. *Second*, because Instagram already promotes a high degree of social comparison, youth find themselves comparing their real-life appearances to the edited appearances not only of themselves but of others online.³⁹⁸ These false and unrealistic body image standards further lead teenagers to develop negative perceptions of their appearance. 77% of girls reported trying to change or hide at least one part of their body before posting a photo of themselves, and 50% believe they did not look good without editing.³⁹⁹

321. *Third*, the specific changes filters make to an individual’s appearance can cause negative obsession or self-hatred surrounding aspects of their appearance.⁴⁰⁰ The filters alter specific facial features such as eyes, lips, jaw, face shape, and slimness, which often require medical intervention to alter in real life.⁴⁰¹ The pervasiveness of Meta-designed filters through the algorithm permeates Instagram and causes adolescent users to negatively compare their real

³⁹⁵ Anna Haines, *From ‘Instagram Face’ to ‘Snapchat Dysmorphia’; How Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c2d58704eff>.

³⁹⁶ Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019255.

³⁹⁷ META3047MDL-003-00157020 at META3047MDL-003-00157020.

³⁹⁸ See *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf> (explaining that users forget that Instagram only shows the highlights of people’s lives and is not depicting reality); Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019255.

³⁹⁹ Anna Haines, *From ‘Instagram Face’ to ‘Snapchat Dysmorphia’; How Beauty Filters Are Changing the Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c2d58704eff>.

⁴⁰⁰ Tonya Russell, *Social Media Filters Are Changing How Young People See Themselves*, Teen Vogue (Jan. 25, 2022), <https://www.teenvogue.com/story/social-media-filters-how-young-people-see-themselves/amp>.

⁴⁰¹ Tonya Russell, *Social Media Filters Are Changing How Young People See Themselves*, Teen Vogue (Jan. 25, 2022), <https://www.teenvogue.com/story/social-media-filters-how-young-people-see-themselves/amp>.

appearances against a false physical reality.⁴⁰² In one recent study, even users who reported a higher initial self-esteem level felt they looked 44% worse before their image was edited using a filter.⁴⁰³ “[W]hen the . . . filter increased the gap between how participants wanted to look and how they felt they actually looked, it reduced their self-compassion and tolerance for their own physical flaws.”⁴⁰⁴ As one psychodermatologist has summed it up, “these apps subconsciously implant the notion of imperfection and ugliness, generating a loss of confidence.”⁴⁰⁵

322. *Fourth*, Meta has intentionally designed its platform to not alert adolescent users when images have been altered through filters or edited. Meta has therefore designed its platform so that users cannot know which images are real and which are fake, deepening negative appearance comparison.

323. The impact of the negative social and appearance comparison caused by Meta’s dangerous platform features is profound. Instagram-induced social comparison creates a schism between the ideal self and the real self, leading to distress and depression. Filters, especially in combination with other platform features, cause body image issues, eating disorders, body dysmorphia, and related harms.⁴⁰⁶

⁴⁰² Tonya Russell, *Social Media Filters Are Changing How Young People See Themselves*, Teen Vogue (Jan. 25, 2022), <https://www.teenvogue.com/story/social-media-filters-how-young-people-see-themselves/amp>.

⁴⁰³ Ana Javornik, Ben Marder, Marta Pizzetti, & Luk Warlop, *Research: How AR Filters Impact People’s Self-Image*, Harvard Business Review (December 22, 2021), <https://hbr.org/2021/12/research-how-ar-filters-impact-peoples-self-image>.

⁴⁰⁴ Ana Javornik, Ben Marder, Marta Pizzetti, & Luk Warlop, *Research: How AR Filters Impact People’s Self-Image*, Harvard Business Review (December 22, 2021), <https://hbr.org/2021/12/research-how-ar-filters-impact-peoples-self-image>.

⁴⁰⁵ Genesis Rivas, *The Mental Health Impacts of Beauty Filters on Social Media Shouldn’t Be Ignored – Here’s Why*, InStyle (Sept. 14, 2022), <https://www.instyle.com/beauty/social-media-filters-mental-health>.

⁴⁰⁶ See Sian McLean, Susan Paxton, Eleanor Wertheim, & Jennifer Masters, *Photoshopping the Selfie: Self Photo Editing and Photo Investment Are Associated with Body Dissatisfaction in Adolescent Girls*, 48 Int’l J. of Eating Disorders 1132, 1133 (Aug. 27, 2015), <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/26311205/> (presenting a 2015 study involving 101 adolescent girls, which found that more time spent editing and sharing selfies on social media raised their risk of experiencing body dissatisfaction and disordered eating habits.); Scott Griffiths, Stuart Murray, Isabel Krug, & Sian McLean, *The Contribution of Social Media to Body Dissatisfaction, Eating Disorder Symptoms, and Anabolic Steroid Use Among Sexual Minority Men*, 21 Cyberpsychology Behavior, and Soc. Networking 149, 149 (Mar. 1, 2018), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5865626/>.

324. Again, none of this has been lost on Meta. To the contrary, Meta has long been aware of the harms Instagram inflicts on youth by perpetuating social comparison to unrealistic beauty standards. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁰⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁰⁸

325. In its “Social Comparison Exploratory Research” conducted in 2020, Meta acknowledged that body image comparisons are formed in part by its dangerous platforms features—filters that flood its app with seemingly unattainable looks like flawless skin, made worse by posters “using hashtags like no-filters but actually using filters.”⁴⁰⁹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴¹⁰ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴¹¹

326. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁴⁰⁷ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017122.

⁴⁰⁸ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017126.

⁴⁰⁹ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015971- Haugen_00015977.

⁴¹⁰ Haugen_00007080 at Haugen_00007082.

⁴¹¹ Haugen_00007080 at Haugen_00007095.

412

413

414

327. One slide from Meta’s study of social comparison offers a particularly succinct summation of how the various platform defects built into Instagram “exacerbate each other to create a perfect storm.”⁴¹⁵ “Posting ‘For the Gram’” creates a “Pressure to Look Perfect.”⁴¹⁶ The ability of influencers to “Monetiz[e] face + body” creates a “Highlight Reel Norm.”⁴¹⁷ And the “Vortex of Feed + Profile and Explore” promotes a “Hate to love” dynamic for users, which “Feed[s] the Spiral” of compulsive use.⁴¹⁸ Taken together, these three features—all driven by very specific design features of Instagram—create a “Social Comparison Sweet Spot.”⁴¹⁹

⁴¹² Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017145.

⁴¹³ Haugen_00020135 at Haugen_00020171.

414 Haugen_00002527 at Haugen_00002527.

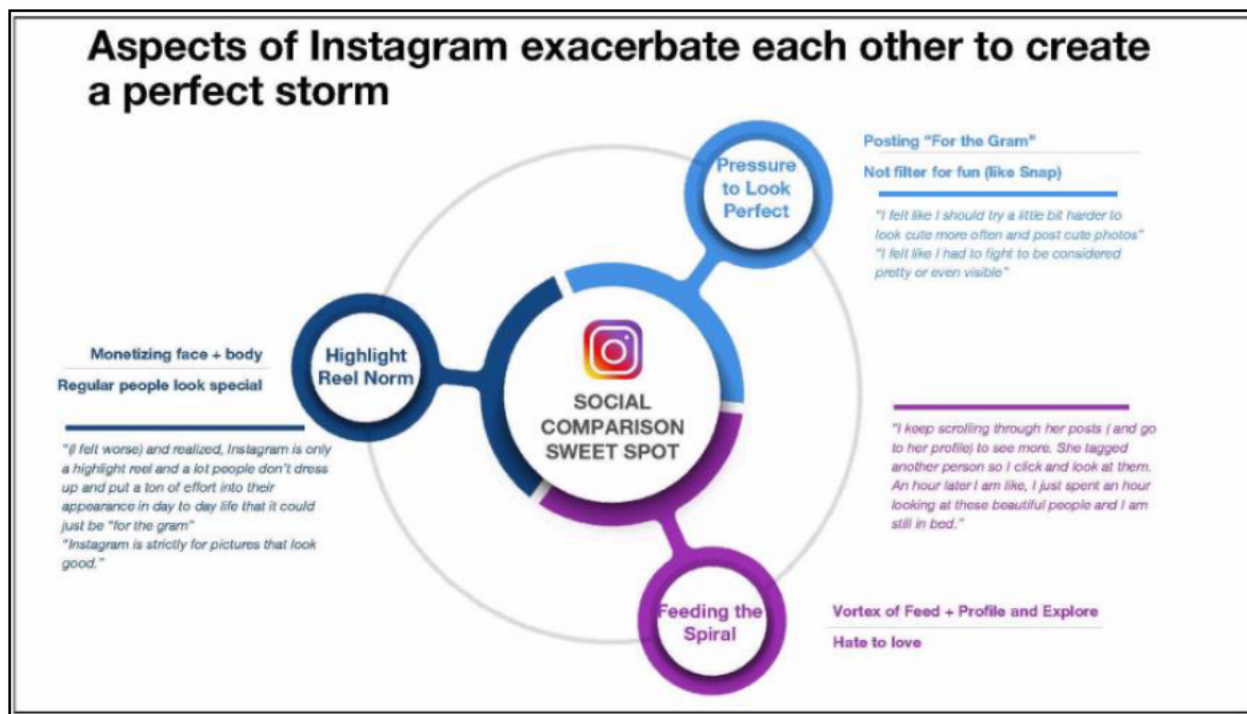
⁴¹⁵ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen 00015958 at Haugen 00015991.

⁴¹⁶ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen 00015958 at Haugen 00015991.

⁴¹⁷ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen_00015958 at Haugen_00015991.

⁴¹⁸ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen 00015958 at Haugen 00015991.

⁴¹⁹ *Teen Girls Body Image and Social Comparison on Instagram – An Exploratory Study in the U.S.*, Wall. St. J. (Sept. 29, 2021), <https://s.wsj.net/public/resources/documents/teen-girls-body-image-and-social-comparison-on-instagram.pdf>; Haugen 00015958 at Haugen 00015991.



328. Finally, Meta understands that the social comparison it knowingly enables through appearance filters create compulsive behavior among child users, especially when paired with other defects such as likes and algorithmic recommendations. Specifically, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²⁰ Its internal research reveals that, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²² [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²³ [REDACTED]

⁴²⁰ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017127.

⁴²¹ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017127.

⁴²² Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017130.

⁴²³ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017127.

329. Meta has the technological capabilities to mitigate social comparison harms significantly but actively chooses to ignore leading research (including its own) and its platform engineers' recommendations. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²⁵

330. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴²⁶ In

other words, despite awareness that the deliberate design of Instagram was drastically damaging teen mental and physical health, Meta ignored the problem, failing to implement its own researchers' recommendations.

4. Meta has failed to implement effective age-verification measures to keep children off of Facebook and Instagram.

331. Meta purports to ban children under the age of 13 from using its services but, at all relevant times, has lacked any reliable form of age verification to prevent such use.

⁴²⁴ Haugen_00019219 at Haugen_00019272.

⁴²⁵ Haugen_00002527 at Haugen_00002565.

⁴²⁶ Haugen_00025741 at Haugen_00025763.

332. Other online services employ substantially more effective and reliable age verification schemes before granting children access. These include but are not limited to connecting new users to parents' accounts, credit card verification, verification by presentation of identification card (or other government-issued document), or linking a verified undergraduate or professional email, among other methods. Meta chooses not to implement any of these systems, even though they are technologically feasible, used by many companies across the Internet, and could be employed at relatively low cost. Indeed, Meta itself uses an age verification technique for its Facebook Dating service that it claims can verify ages without identifying users—but does not use the same technology at account startup for Facebook or Instagram.⁴²⁷

333. For most of its history, Meta knew that children under the age of 13 were using its apps. And it certainly could have figured this out based on posted photos of elementary school age users. Yet Meta continued to promote and target Facebook and Instagram to children. As long as a new user simply clicked a box confirming that they were at least 13 years old, Meta asked no questions, engaged in zero follow-up, and let the user access the services indefinitely. This did not go unnoticed by certain of its employees, who criticized the company's policy: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁴²⁸

334. Indeed, Meta did not ask for the age of new Instagram users until December 2019, after Instagram had been on the market for more than seven years.⁴²⁹ Even then, Meta did not ask

⁴²⁷ Erica Finkle, Meta Director of Data Governance, *Bringing Age Verification to Facebook Dating*, Meta (Dec. 5, 2022), <https://about.fb.com/news/2022/12/facebook-dating-age-verification/>.

⁴²⁸ META3047MDL-003-00086015 at META3047MDL-003-00086015.

⁴²⁹ META3047MDL-003-00157020 at META3047MDL-003-00157020 [REDACTED]

existing users to disclose their ages, effectively grandfathering in underage users. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴³⁰ Meta did not attempt to correct *that* problem until August 30, 2021. And Meta did not begin requiring age verification for users who attempt to change their age from under to over 18 until 2022.⁴³¹

335. But even this minimal age verification procedure is toothless. Well over a year since the Congressional testimony of whistleblower Frances Haugen regarding the harm Meta causes to minors, Meta still does not as a default matter require users to verify their ages upon signing up to use Instagram or Facebook. Users are only asked to self-report their birthday:

(Facebook, January 2023)

(Instagram, January 2023)

⁴³⁰ META3047MDL-003-00042548 at META3047MDL-003-00042551- META3047MDL-003-00042552.

⁴³¹ Instagram, *Introducing New Ways to Verify Age on Instagram*, Meta (June 23, 2022), <https://about.fb.com/news/2022/06/new-ways-to-verify-age-on-instagram/>. Meta explained the choice of age by saying that they provide users under 18 with an experience that is appropriate for their age, including “preventing unwanted contact from adults they don’t know.” Instagram, *Introducing New Ways to Verify Age on Instagram*, Meta (June 23, 2022), <https://about.fb.com/news/2022/06/new-ways-to-verify-age-on-instagram/>. However, as described below, each week hundreds of thousands of children are inappropriately contacted by adults on Instagram.

336. If the user reports a birthday indicating they are less than 13 years old, they are informed that they cannot create an account. However, after acknowledging this message, users can *immediately* reattempt to create an account and input an eligible birthday. When a user enters an eligible birthday, there are no restrictions to creating an account, other than having it linked to a cell phone number or an email address. In other words, Meta routinely allows pre-teens to misrepresent their age as 13 or 40 or any other age—without so much as asking for proof. This is analogous to selling a teenager alcohol who has admitted to being under 21 but then promptly changed his story.

337. The upshot is that, in a matter of seconds, and without age verification, identity verification, or parental consent, children of all ages can create a Facebook or Instagram account, and immediately become subject to the services' various addictive and harmful features.⁴³²

338. There can be no serious debate about whether Meta has more effective age verification tools at its disposal. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴³³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴³⁴

339. Perversely, Meta does employ age verification on Instagram—but only when a user self-reports they are *younger* than 13. In that case, Meta provides a user with what amounts to an

⁴³² Similarly, the absence of effective age verification measures means that adult users can claim to be children—with obvious dangers to the actual children on Meta's platforms.

⁴³³ Haugen_00003463, at Haugen_00003463- Haugen_00003465; *see also* Ibrahim Mousa Al-Zaub, Assef Jafar, & Kadan Aljoumaa, *Predicting customer's gender and age depending on mobile phone data*, 6 Journal of Big Data 18 (Feb 19, 2029), <https://journalofbigdata.springeropen.com/articles/10.1186/s40537-019-0180-9> (discussing generally how a similar age prediction algorithm works).

⁴³⁴ Haugen_00003463, at Haugen_00003463-Haugen_00003465.

appeal right: “if you believe we made a mistake, please verify your age by submitting a valid photo ID that clearly shows your face and date of birth.”

4:07 5G

Help Us Verify Your Age

You must be at least 13 years old to have an Instagram account. We disabled your account because you are not old enough yet. If you believe we made a mistake, please verify your age by submitting a valid photo ID that clearly shows your face and date of birth.

Full name

Email address
 Please provide the email address connected to your account.

Instagram username

Date of birth

Your ID
 no file selected

Please provide a photo of a [valid ID](#).

Your photo ID must include your face and date of birth so we can verify your age. After you send us a copy of your ID, it'll be encrypted and stored securely. Your ID won't be visible on your profile, to friends or to other people on Instagram and will be deleted 30 days after submission.

Any additional info

[ABOUT US](#) [HELP](#) [API](#) [JOBS](#) [TERMS](#) [PRIVACY](#)

[help.instagram.com](#)

340. That is, instead of asking users to prove they are really *over* 13, Meta asks them if they are really sure they are *under* 13. At best, this reflects a completely upside-down view of Meta’s duty of care, using age verification to screen *in* minor users but not to screen them *out*. At worst, Meta’s “are you sure you’re really under 13” question invites pre-teens to falsify their identification to gain access to Instagram.

341. Similarly, Meta imposes unnecessary barriers to the removal of accounts created by children under 13. Since at least April 2018, Instagram and Facebook both accept reports of accounts created by children under 13.⁴³⁵ However, before an Instagram or Facebook account is deleted, Meta requires verification that the child is under the age of 13. For example, Instagram's reporting page states:

if you're reporting a child's account that was made with a false date of birth, and the child's age can be reasonably verified as under 13, we'll delete the account. You will not get confirmation that the account has been deleted, but you should no longer be able to view it on Instagram. Keep in mind that complete and detailed reports (example: providing the username of the account you're reporting) help us take appropriate action. If the reported child's age can't reasonably be verified as under 13, then we may not be able to take action on the account.⁴³⁶

Facebook's reporting page contains almost identical language.⁴³⁷ By choosing to implement age verification only before deleting accounts of users suspected to be children, but not when those accounts are first created, Meta makes it more difficult to prove a user is under age 13 than it does for a minor to pretend to be over 13.

342. It is unclear how long Meta takes to delete a reported account on average, if it does so at all. Meta has ignored some parents' attempts to report and deactivate accounts of children under 13 years old.

⁴³⁵ *Report an Underage User on Instagram*, Instagram, <https://help.instagram.com/contact/723586364339719?fbclid=IwAR3E5rZo8zvp9Uw3giRoQRM5qFmIGpy-NOLLtpctHOWkalXtfJ1ft9O09Q>; *Report an Underage Child*, Facebook, <https://www.facebook.com/help/contact/209046679279097>.

⁴³⁶ *Report an Underage User on Instagram*, Instagram, <https://help.instagram.com/contact/723586364339719?fbclid=IwAR3E5rZo8zvp9Uw3giRoQRM5qFmIGpy-NOLLtpctHOWkalXtfJ1ft9O09Q>.

⁴³⁷ *Reporting an Underage Child*, Facebook, <https://www.facebook.com/help/contact/209046679279097>.

343. Zuckerberg has stated that he believes children under 13 should be allowed on Facebook,⁴³⁸ so Meta's lax approach to age verification is no surprise.

344. Meta's approach to underage users of its service has consistently been one of feigned ignorance. On October 10, 2021, Senator Marsha Blackburn reported that a young celebrity told Instagram CEO Adam Mosseri that she had been active on Instagram since she was eight. Mosseri replied that he "didn't want to know that."⁴³⁹

345. But Meta *does* know that its age-verification protocols are inadequate to keep minors off Facebook and Instagram. According to a May 2011 ABC News report, "about 7.5 million [Facebook] users in the U.S. are under the age of 13, and about 5 million are under the age of 10."⁴⁴⁰ Meta knows through retrospective cohort analyses that "up to 10 to 15% of even 10-year-olds in a given cohort may be on Facebook or Instagram."⁴⁴¹

346. Meta knows that its chosen method of registration does not adequately protect minor users from reporting inaccurate and implausible age information. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴²

⁴³⁸ Kashmir Hill, *Mark Zuckerberg Is Wrong About Kids Under 13 Not Being Allowed on Facebook* (May 20, 2011), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/kashmirhill/2011/05/20/mark-zuckerberg-is-wrong-about-kids-under-13-not-being-allowed-on-facebook/?sh=2ea85e825506>.

⁴³⁹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁴⁴⁰ Ki Mae Heussner, *Underage Facebook Members: 7.5 Million Users Under Age 13*, ABC (May 9, 2011), <https://abcnews.go.com/Technology/underage-facebook-members-75-million-users-age-13/story?id=13565619>.

⁴⁴¹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁴⁴² Haugen_00012303 at Haugen_00012314.

347. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴⁴ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴⁵

348. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴⁶ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁴⁸ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

⁴⁴³ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023910.

⁴⁴⁴ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023866.

⁴⁴⁵ Haugen_00023849 at Haugen_00023879.

⁴⁴⁶ Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016728.

⁴⁴⁷ Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016728-Haugen_00016732.

⁴⁴⁸ Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016736-Haugen_00016740.

[illegible]

349. Meta has not used its concerning knowledge about preteen use and engagement to comply with COPPA. Far to the contrary, it has leveraged its research to manipulate households and target preteens through their siblings.

5. Facebook's and Instagram's parental controls are dangerous.

350. Facebook and Instagram lack adequate parental controls, which hinders parents' ability to monitor and protect their children from harm.

351. Despite its obligations under COPPA, Meta does not require “verifiable parental consent” for minors to use Facebook or Instagram. Meta has chosen to avoid its obligations by *purporting* to ban children younger than 13, despite knowing that such children continue to access and use its services due to its inadequate age verification methods.

352. Meta’s lackadaisical approach to complying with COPPA is palpable in its internal documents. [REDACTED]

450

353. While COPPA requires parental consent only for users under the age of 13, a reasonable company that knows or should have known its services are harmful to adolescents would require parental consent for *any* minor to use them. But Meta’s lack of parental consent

⁴⁴⁹ Haugen 00016728 at Haugen 00016728- Haugen 00016734.

450 Haugen 00017238 at Haugen 00017240.

requirement for any underage users robs parents of an important way to protect their children from the harms caused by Instagram and Facebook.

354. Those apps largely lack parental controls, despite their ready availability, affordability, and ease of implementation. For example, Meta has chosen not to: (a) require children's accounts on Facebook and Instagram to be linked to their parents', as it does with another one of its services, Messenger Kids;⁴⁵¹ (b) send reports of a child's activity to parents; (c) allow parents to implement maximum daily usage limitations or to prohibit use during certain hours (school, sleep hours, etc.); (d) notify parents about interactions with accounts associated with adults; (e) notify parents when CSAM is found on a minor's account; or (f) require parental approval before a minor can follow new accounts.

355. Controls like these would enable parents to track the frequency, time of day, and duration of their child's use, identify and address problems arising from such use, and better exercise their rights and responsibilities as parents. It is reasonable for parents to expect that social media companies that actively promote their services to minors will undertake reasonable efforts to notify parents when their child's use becomes excessive, occurs during sleep time, or exposes the child to harmful content. Meta could feasibly design Instagram and Facebook to do so at negligible cost.

356. Meta creates a foreseeable risk to adolescent users through its dangerous services and then attempts to shift the burden of protection from those services onto parents. As troublingly, Meta intentionally designs Facebook and Instagram so that children can easily evade their parents' supervision. Instagram and Facebook allow children to create a limitless number of anonymous accounts without parental approval or knowledge, and also allows kids to block their parent's

⁴⁵¹ Loren Chang, *Introducing Messenger Kids, a New App for Families to Connect*, Meta (Dec. 4, 2017), <https://about.fb.com/news/2017/12/introducing-messenger-kids-a-new-app-for-families-to-connect/>.

profile.⁴⁵² On Instagram, children can post stories to “Close Friends Only” (i.e., to a select group of followers), excluding their parents. On Facebook, children can place their parents on a “restricted list” of people who are unable to view their stories.

357. Meta has intentionally designed many aspects of Instagram and Facebook to undermine parental supervision in an effort to maximize teen usage: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁵³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁵⁴

358. As one internal document described the issue:

[REDACTED]

⁴⁵² [REDACTED] Haugen_00017698 at Haugen_00017784. “Finsta,” a widely used slang term, is a contraction of “fake” and “Insta” (short for Instagram). Caity Weaver and Danya Issawi, *‘Finsta,’ Explained*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 30, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/09/30/style/finsta-instagram-accounts-senate.html>. “It is neither an official designation nor a type of account offered by Facebook. Rather, it is a term many users ascribe to secondary accounts they create for themselves on Instagram, where their identities — and, often, the content of their posts — are obscured to all but a small, carefully chosen group of followers.” Caity Weaver and Danya Issawi, *‘Finsta,’ Explained*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 30, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/09/30/style/finsta-instagram-accounts-senate.html>.

⁴⁵³ Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016735.

⁴⁵⁴ Haugen_00011969 at Haugen_00011974-75. [REDACTED] META3047MDL-003-00146492 at META3047MDL-003-00146495; META3047MDL-003-00178437.

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]⁴⁵⁵

359. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]⁴⁵⁶

360. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁵⁷

361. Finally, Meta has failed to develop effective reporting tools to deal with abuse directed at children through Instagram and Facebook. Meta does not have a phone number that a parent or child can call to report such abuse in real time. Its online reporting mechanisms lack an immediate response mechanism, regardless of the seriousness of the harm at issue.

6. Facebook's and Instagram's dangerous features include impediments to discontinuing use.

⁴⁵⁵ Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016735.

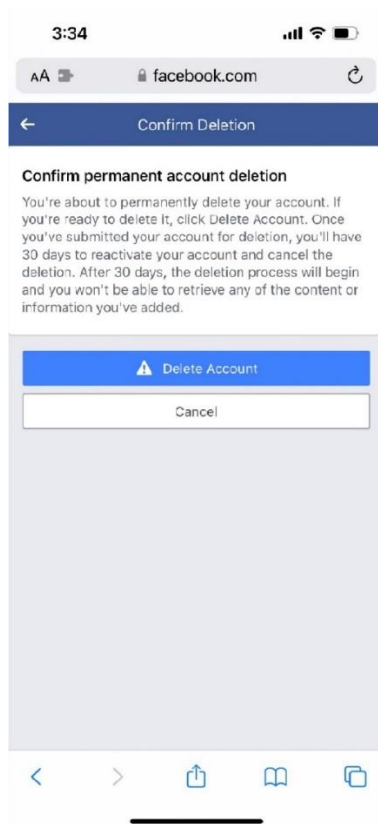
⁴⁵⁶ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017173.

⁴⁵⁷ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017173.

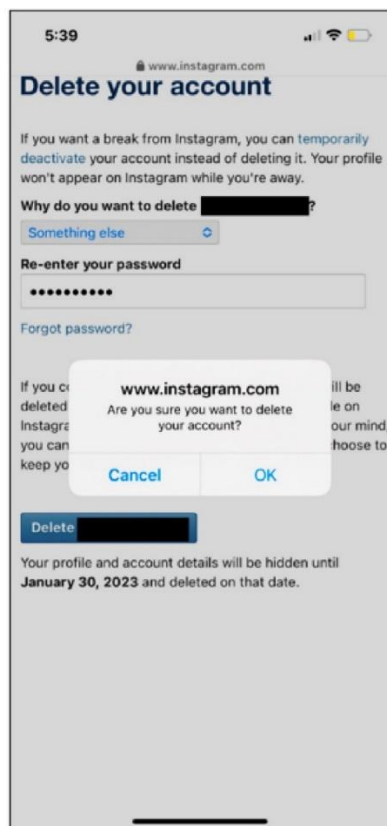
362. Meta has intentionally and dangerously designed its services so that adolescent users face significant navigational obstacles and hurdles when trying to delete or deactivate their accounts, in contrast to the ease with which users can create those accounts.

363. Currently, to delete or deactivate an Instagram or Facebook account, a user must locate and tap on approximately seven different buttons (through seven different pages and popups) from the main feed.

364. Even if a user successfully navigates these seven pages, Meta still won't immediately delete their account. Instead, Meta preserves the account for 30 more days. If at any time during those 30 days a user's addictive craving becomes overwhelming and they access the account again, the deletion process starts over. The user must go through all the above steps again, including the 30-day waiting period, if they again wish to delete their account.



(Facebook Final Deletion Screen
February 2023)



(Instagram Final Deletion Screen,
January 2023)(account name
redacted)

365. Moreover, the deletion process includes what Meta readily acknowledges are [redacted] attempts to dissuade users from deleting their accounts.⁴⁵⁸ Before a user can delete their Facebook account, Meta [redacted]
[redacted]
[redacted]⁴⁵⁹ Meta also requires users attempting to leave Instagram to select a reason why they are leaving.

366. As an additional barrier to deletion, Meta urges users of both services to deactivate, rather than delete, their accounts. For example, Instagram users who choose to delete their accounts are immediately shown a screen with their profile picture and asked: “Deactivate your account

⁴⁵⁸ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_0001689398.

⁴⁵⁹ Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_0001689398.

instead of deleting?” The option to deactivate is conspicuously highlighted. Similarly, Facebook displays a screen that automatically selects the option of deactivating rather than deleting a user account.

367. Meta’s aggressive efforts to prevent users from discontinuing their use of Facebook and Instagram is particularly problematic because unsuccessful efforts to discontinue use are a hallmark of addiction, incorporated as the sixth criteria in the *Bergen Social Media Addiction Scale*, discussed above.

D. Meta has concealed from the public and Congress the harmful effects that Instagram’s and Facebook’s design have on children.

368. Meta has engaged in a years-long pattern of concealing critical information about the safety of Instagram and Facebook from the public. In one internal document from February 2018, employees at Meta communicated internally about [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁶⁰

369. Meta knew that none of this was true. For instance, [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁴⁶⁰ META3047MDL-003-00082165 at META3047MDL-003-00082165- META3047MDL-003-00082165.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁶¹

370. [REDACTED]⁴⁶²

Meta did the opposite. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁶³ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] All the while, Meta ignored cries from their well-being researchers to aggressively confront its youth safety problem: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁶⁴

371. Despite knowing better, Meta's high-ranking executives then began pushing intentionally misleading talking points to the public. Instead of informing the public about Meta's internal research demonstrating Instagram's and Facebook's negative impacts on the health and well-being of the nation's youth, Meta repeatedly omitted key facts and misrepresented its platforms in service of an overall message touting the safety of its services for children.

372. Because of Meta's concealment, the public and Congress were left in the dark and reasonably relied on Meta's reassurances. Had Meta disclosed the truth regarding its services, users would have been able to avoid or mitigate, and many would have avoided and mitigated, the harms they ultimately suffered by using Meta's services. Instead, Meta pursued a knowing pattern of concealment.

⁴⁶¹ META3047MDL-003-00089174 at META3047MDL-003-00089176.

⁴⁶² META3047MDL-003-00082165 at META3047MDL-003-00082165- META3047MDL-003-00082165.

⁴⁶³ META3047MDL-003-00011697 at META3047MDL-003-00011698.

⁴⁶⁴ META3047MDL-003-00103260 at META3047MDL-003-00103260.

373. In the year leading up to Meta's acquisition of Instagram, Meta publicly acknowledged its duty to children and worked to create false expectations about its services' safety. For example,

- a. Zuckerberg (3/25/2011): "So, we're really focused on, on safety, especially children's safety. So we're having folks under the age of 18, um we, we just take a lot of extra precautions for it, to make sure that it's just a safe environment for them um, to use this service that you know, the default for, for people sharing things isn't that they're sharing with everyone but that they're sharing with a smaller community ... But I think, I think that's a lot of it. We really try to build a safe environment. Um, and um, that's gonna be the key long term."⁴⁶⁵
- b. Zuckerberg (3/25/2011): "Right, and they, they feel like Facebook is this really secure place and that it's a hundred percent safe, and um, we're always thinking about little and big things like that that we can do to keep it safe for, for the people who use our service."⁴⁶⁶
- c. Zuckerberg (5/25/2011): "I mean, we do not allow people under the age of 13 to sign up and I think if we ever were, we would need to try to figure out a lot of ways to make sure that they were safe, right, because that's just extremely important and that's just not the top of the list in terms of things for us to figure out right now."⁴⁶⁷

374. Following Meta's acquisition of Instagram, high-ranking executives continued to make public pronouncements about the safety of Meta's services, including but not limited to the following statements:

- a. Zuckerberg (12/1/2015): "We will do our part to make this [better world] happen, not only because we love you, but also because we have a moral responsibility to all children in the next generation."⁴⁶⁸
- b. Zuckerberg (4/11/2018): "Congressman, we have a number of measures in place to protect minors specifically. We make it so that adults can't contact

⁴⁶⁵ Mark Zuckerberg at BYU with Senator Orrin Hatch, YouTube, March 25, 2011, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zRsbW0mmvNo>.

⁴⁶⁶ Mark Zuckerberg at BYU with Senator Orrin Hatch, YouTube, March 25, 2011, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zRsbW0mmvNo>.

⁴⁶⁷ Maurice Levy, *Conversation with Mark Zuckerberg at E-G8 Forum*, YouTube, May 25, 2011, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Gy0bq9FAJRs>.

⁴⁶⁸ Mark Zuckerberg, Facebook (Dec. 1, 2015), <https://www.facebook.com/zuck/posts/10153375081581634>.

minors who they - they aren't already friends with. We make it so that certain content that may be inappropriate for minors, we don't show."⁴⁶⁹

- c. Zuckerberg (4/10/2018): when asked by members of the U.S. Senate Committee on Commerce, Science, and Transportation whether his companies "[h]ire consulting firms to help them figure out how to get more dopamine feedback loops so that people don't want to leave the platform": "No . . . that's not how we talk about this or how we set up our product teams. We want our products to be valuable to people, and if they're valuable, then people choose to use them."⁴⁷⁰
- d. Zuckerberg (7/12/2018): "There are really two core principles at play here. There's giving people a voice, so that people can express their opinions. Then, there's keeping the community safe, which I think is really important."⁴⁷¹
- e. Zuckerberg (7/25/2018): "[W]e will continue to invest heavily in security and privacy because we have a responsibility to keep people safe. But as I've said on past calls, we're investing so much in security that it will significantly impact our profitability."⁴⁷²
- f. Zuckerberg (8/21/2018): "One of the most important responsibilities we have as a company is to keep people safe and stop anyone from abusing our service."⁴⁷³
- g. Zuckerberg (9/7/2018): "What I've learned so far is that when you build services that are used by billions of people across countries and cultures, you will see all of the good humanity is capable of, and people will try to abuse those services in every way possible. It is our responsibility to amplify the good and mitigate the bad."⁴⁷⁴

⁴⁶⁹ *Transcript of Zuckerberg's appearance before House committee*, Wash. Post (April 11, 2018)

https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2018/04/11/transcript-of-zuckerbergs-appearance-before-house-committee/?utm_term=.e7b476fb8ac7&noredirect=on.

⁴⁷⁰ *Facebook, Social Media Privacy, and the Use and Abuse of Data: Hearing Before the S. Comm. on Commerce, Sci., and Transp. and H. Comm's on the Judiciary and Commerce, Sci., and Transp., 115th Cong.* (Apr. 10, 2018), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2018/4/facebook-social-media-privacy-and-the-use-and-abuse-of-data>.

⁴⁷¹ Kara Swisher, *Zuckerberg: The Record Interview*, Vox (July 12, 2018)

<https://www.vox.com/2018/7/18/17575156/mark-zuckerberg-interview-facebook-recode-kara-swisher>.

⁴⁷² *Facebook, Inc., Second Quarter 2018 Results Conference Call* (July 25, 2018)

https://s21.q4cdn.com/399680738/files/doc_financials/2018/Q2/Q218-earnings-call-transcript.pdf.

⁴⁷³ Mark Zuckerberg, Facebook (Aug. 21, 2018),

https://www.facebook.com/zuck/posts/10105188590724391?_tn=K-R.

⁴⁷⁴ Mark Zuckerberg, Facebook (Sept. 7, 2018),

https://www.facebook.com/zuck/posts/10105224999156601?_xts=%5B0%5D%68.ARB273c8TJkMqNAclfl-i0UB6fVWHZ_h04k0KASCy8XfVdyC9XEVqoPLsPUPDh94zSHboQiB1t3mSIP9yEUyjaEF50UxoUqVca4ZcM4nnkQ3MWz3dBGROQYm7IJMj_Cbl25p7a9-HX-aXjkiNdS21XzaAThg9PfkzJ_dTLszwUZ3H6b3Q4biIc&_tn=.

- h. Zuckerberg (11/15/2018): “[W]e have a responsibility to keep people safe on our services -- whether from terrorism, bullying, or other threats.”⁴⁷⁵
- i. Zuckerberg (1/1/2019): “We ended 2018 with more than 30,000 people working on safety and security -- up from 10,000 people a couple of years ago.”⁴⁷⁶
- j. Zuckerberg (1/30/2019): “[O]n all the content and safety and security issues, there’s more to do here but I’m proud of the work that we have done to get in front of a lot more of these issues.”⁴⁷⁷
- k. Zuckerberg (3/30/2019): “[W]e have a responsibility to keep people safe on our services.”⁴⁷⁸
- l. Zuckerberg (4/24/2019): “You should expect we’ll do everything we can to keep you safe on our services, within the bounds of an encrypted service.”⁴⁷⁹
- m. Sheryl Sandberg (1/29/2020): “[We] have to keep people safe and give them control over their experience on our apps. And we are.”⁴⁸⁰
- n. Sheryl Sandberg (10/29/2020): “While we continue to invest in helping businesses, we are equally focused on keeping our platform safe.”⁴⁸¹
- o. Meta (12/23/2020), when asked by the Senate Committee on the Judiciary whether it could “determine whether increased use of their platform among teenage girls has any correlation with increased signs of depression [or anxiety]”: “No.” And, when asked what research Meta had conducted internally on the mental health impacts of social media use: “[t]he effects of social media are still being studied.”⁴⁸²

⁴⁷⁵ Mark Zuckerberg, Facebook (Nov. 15, 2018), <https://www.facebook.com/notes/mark-zuckerberg/a-blueprint-for-content-governance-and-enforcement/10156443129621634/>.

⁴⁷⁶ Meta Investor Relations, *Earnings Call Transcript*, Meta (Jan. 1, 2019), <https://investor.fb.com/investor-events/event-details/2019/Facebook-Q4-2018-Earnings/default.aspx>.

⁴⁷⁷ Meta Investor Relations, *Earnings Call Transcript*, Meta (Jan. 30, 2019), <https://investor.fb.com/financials/default.aspx>.

⁴⁷⁸ Mark Zuckerberg, *Mark Zuckerberg: The Internet needs new rules. Let’s start in these four areas*, Wash. Post (March 30, 2019), https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/mark-zuckerberg-the-internet-needs-new-rules-lets-start-in-these-four-areas/2019/03/29/9e6f0504-521a-11e9-a3f7-78b7525a8d5f_story.html?noredirect=on.

⁴⁷⁹ Mark Zuckerberg, Facebook (April 24, 2019), <https://www.facebook.com/zuck/posts/10107243286682221>.

⁴⁸⁰ Meta Investor Relations, *Earnings Call Transcript*, Meta (Jan. 29, 2020), <https://investor.fb.com/investor-events/default.aspx>.

⁴⁸¹ Meta Investor Relations, *Earnings Call Transcript*, Meta (Oct. 29, 2020), <https://investor.fb.com/investor-events/default.aspx>.

⁴⁸² Facebook, Inc. Responses to Questions for the Record from the Comm. on the Judiciary November 17, 2020 Hearing: Breaking the News: Censorship, Suppression, and the 2020 Election, at 124-125 (December 23, 2020), <https://www.judiciary.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/Zuckerberg%20Responses%20to%20QFRs.pdf>.

- p. Zuckerberg (3/25/21), when asked by members of the U.S. House of Representatives Committee on Energy and Commerce, “Do you believe that your platform harms children?”: “I don’t believe so. This is something that we study and we care a lot about; designing products that improve peoples’ well-being is very important to us. And what our products do is help people stay connected to people they care about, which I think is one of the most fundamental and important human things that we do, whether that’s for teens or for people who are older than that.”⁴⁸³
- q. David Wehner, Chief Financial Officer of Meta (4/28/2021): “I mean, the only thing I’d add . . . is that, I think more than anyone else in the industry, we invest on the safety and security side to sort of keep bad content off the site before it gets ranked and put into what people see. So we’ve got 35,000 -- over 35,000 people on the safety and security side. We’ve got the most robust set of content policies out there. We do a quarterly call, public call around our content review process and procedures. So I think that on the front, before it even gets into the algorithm, I think we really do more than anyone else in the industry on the safety and security front to prevent things like misinformation and a bad content going into the system in the first place.”⁴⁸⁴
- r. Adam Mosseri (5/2021): in statement to reporters, dismissing concerns around Instagram’s negative impact on teens as “quite small.”⁴⁸⁵

375. On each of the above occasions, and on many others, Meta touted the safety of its services; it could have but failed to disclose information it knew concerning the significant risks associated with its services, even though it knew that the public lacked access to this information. For instance, in a December 2019 memo, Meta’s Chief Technology Officer, remarked that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁸⁶

⁴⁸³ *Disinformation Nation: Social Media’s Role in Promoting Extremism and Misinformation Hearing Before H. Energy and Commerce Subcomm. on Communications and Technology* (March 25, 2021), <https://www.congress.gov/117/meeting/house/111407/documents/HHRG-117-IF16-Transcript-20210325.pdf>.

⁴⁸⁴ Meta Investor Relations, *Earnings Call Transcript*, Meta (April 28, 2021), <https://investor.fb.com/investor-events/event-details/2021/Facebook-Q1-2021-Earnings-/default.aspx>.

⁴⁸⁵ Taylor Hatmaker, *Facebook Knows Instagram Harms Teens. Now its Plan to Open the App to Kids Looks Worse than Ever*, TechCrunch (Sept. 16, 2021), <https://techcrunch.com/2021/09/16/facebook-instagram-for-kids-mosseri-wsj-teen-girls/>.

⁴⁸⁶ Haugen_00007350 at Haugen_00007350 [REDACTED]

376. Meta’s pattern of intentional concealment came to a head in August 2021, just weeks before Frances Haugen dropped her bombshell revelations on the public. On August 4, 2021, Senators Marsha Blackburn and Richard Blumenthal wrote to Mark Zuckerberg. The Senators’ letter observed that “[a]n expanding volume of scientific research shows that social media platforms can have a profoundly harmful impact on young audiences” and noted “grave concerns about [Meta’s] apparent effort to ensnare children into social media platforms at earlier and earlier ages.”⁴⁸⁷ The letter concluded by asking Zuckerberg six “pretty straightforward questions about how the company works and safeguards children and teens on Instagram.”⁴⁸⁸

377. In its August 17, 2021 written response to Senators Blackburn and Blumenthal, Meta omitted any reference to the internal research it had conducted demonstrating the negative impact Instagram can have on kids’ mental health.⁴⁸⁹

378. The Senators’ letter asked whether Meta had ever developed services or features “that it had reason to believe could have a negative effect on children’s and teens’ mental health or well-being.”⁴⁹⁰ Meta responded by claiming it had “built many special protections for teens.”⁴⁹¹

⁴⁸⁷ Letter from Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, to Mark Zuckerberg, Chief Executive Officer of Facebook (Aug. 4, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/8.4.21%20-%20Facebook%20-%20Mental%20Health%20and%20Kids%20Letter.pdf>.

⁴⁸⁸ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>; see also Letter from Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, to Mark Zuckerberg, Chief Executive Officer of Facebook (Aug. 4, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/8.4.21%20-%20Facebook%20-%20Mental%20Health%20and%20Kids%20Letter.pdf>.

⁴⁸⁹ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁰ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 4 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹¹ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 4 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

But it failed to mention, for example, that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁹²

379. The Senators’ letter also asked if Meta’s research had “ever found that its platforms and products can have a negative effect on children’s and teens’ mental health or well-being.”⁴⁹³ Meta responded that the matter was “still being studied,”⁴⁹⁴ that it was challenging to conduct such research,⁴⁹⁵ and that the company was “not aware of a consensus among studies or experts about how much screen time is ‘too much.’”⁴⁹⁶ While Meta reiterated its vague and already public position that “passive” use of social media can correlate with “negative outcomes,”⁴⁹⁷ it failed to disclose any more specific findings.⁴⁹⁸

380. Meta should have, but intentionally did not, respond to the Senators’ question by disclosing its detailed research regarding [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁴⁹⁹ [REDACTED]

⁴⁹² Haugen_00016893 at Haugen_00016914 ([REDACTED]).

⁴⁹³ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 2 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁴ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 2 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁵ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 3 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁶ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 3 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁷ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 3 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>; *see also* Meta Investor Relations, Earnings Call Transcript, Meta (April 25, 2018), https://s21.q4cdn.com/399680738/files/doc_financials/2018/Q1/Q1-18-Earnings-call-transcript.pdf.

⁴⁹⁸ Letter from Facebook, Inc. to Richard Blumenthal, U.S. Senator, and Marsha Blackburn, U.S. Senator 6 (Aug. 17, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/817.21facebookresponseletter.pdf>.

⁴⁹⁹ Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016379 [REDACTED];

Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016373 [REDACTED];

Haugen_00005458 at Haugen_00005473 [REDACTED];

[REDACTED]; Haugen_00007055 at Haugen_00007055 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 500 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 501 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 502 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 503 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 504 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 505 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 506 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 507,508 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 509 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 510 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 511 [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] 512 [REDACTED]

⁵⁰⁰ Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016381 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰¹ Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016381.

⁵⁰² Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016383.

⁵⁰³ Haugen_00017177 at Haugen_00017181 [REDACTED]; Haugen_00005458 at Haugen_00005750-Haugen_00005751 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁴ Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016414 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁵ Haugen_00016373 at Haugen_00016410 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁶ Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017171 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁷ Haugen_00005458 at Haugen_00005484 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁸ Haugen_00000797 at Haugen_00000797 [REDACTED].

⁵⁰⁹ Haugen_00005458 at Haugen_00005500 [REDACTED].

⁵¹⁰ Haugen_00002527 at Haugen_00002527 [REDACTED].

⁵¹¹ Haugen_00000797 at Haugen_00000875 [REDACTED].

⁵¹² Haugen_00017069 at Haugen_00017121 [REDACTED].

[REDACTED]⁵¹³

[REDACTED]⁵¹⁴ its researchers’ conclusion that teens “[h]ave an addict’s narrative about their use” of Instagram;⁵¹⁵ and its survey finding that “[o]ver one third of teens felt they have only a little control of nor control at all over how Instagram makes them feel”⁵¹⁶—in addition to the other findings described in this Complaint.

381. Meta’s years-long concealment of its research was revealed just weeks later, when Frances Haugen released these studies, along with a trove of other internal Meta documents, to the Wall Street Journal. Even these disclosures did not reveal the full scope and extent of Meta’s misrepresentations, discussed elsewhere in this complaint.

382. On September 21, 2021, Senator Blumenthal confronted a Meta representative about the conspicuous omissions in Meta's response to his letter:

Last month, on August 4, Senator Blackburn and I wrote to Mark Zuckerberg and asked him specifically about this issue. We asked, and I'm quoting, "Has Facebook's research ever found that its platforms and products can have a negative effect on children's and teens' mental health or well-being such as increased suicidal thoughts, heightened anxiety, unhealthy usage patterns, negative self-image, or other indications of lower well-being?"

It wasn't a trick question. It preceded the reports in the Journal. We had no idea about the whistleblower documents that were ultimately revealed.

⁵¹³ Haugen_00003739 at Haugen_00003739

514 Haugen_00005378 at Haugen_00005379

⁵¹⁵ *Subcomm.: Protecting Kids Online: Facebook, Instagram, and Mental Health Harms Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection Product Safety, and Data Security* (Sept. 30, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/9/protecting-kids-online-facebook-instagram-and-mental-health-harms>).

⁵¹⁶ Subcomm.: Protecting Kids Online: Facebook, Instagram, and Mental Health Harms Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection Product Safety, and Data Security (Sept. 30, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/9/protecting-kids-online-facebook-instagram-and-mental-health-harms>.

Facebook dodged the question. “We are not aware of a consensus among studies or experts about how much screen time is too much.”

We are not aware. Well, we all know now that representation was simply untrue.⁵¹⁷

383. Senator Blumenthal went on to ask the witness, Facebook’s Vice President of Privacy & Public Policy, “why did Facebook misrepresent its research on mental health and teens when it responded to me and Senator Blackburn?” After disputing the characterization, Satterfield responded, “The safety and well-being of the teens on our platform is a top priority for the company. We’re going to continue to make it a priority. This was important research.” Senator Blumenthal then went on: “Why did you conceal it?” Satterfield responded, “we didn’t make it public because we don’t, with a lot of the research we do because we think that is an important way of encouraging free and frank discussion within the company about hard issues.”⁵¹⁸

384. Meta unilaterally decided to prioritize “free and frank” internal discussion over honest and transparent responses to direct questions from sitting United States Senators. When it “dodged, ducked, sidetracked, [and] in effect misled” Senators Blumenthal and Blackburn, Meta deceived the public via its elected representatives.⁵¹⁹

⁵¹⁷ Richard Blumenthal, *Blumenthal Demands Facebook Appear at Next Week’s Consumer Protection Subcomm. Hearing to Explain Coverup of its Platforms’ Negative Impact on Teens and Children* (Sept. 21, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/newsroom/press/release/blumenthal-demands-facebook-appear-at-next-weeks-consumer-protection-subcommittee-hearing-to-explain-coverup-of-its-platforms-negative-impact-on-teens-and-children>.

⁵¹⁸ Richard Blumenthal, *Blumenthal Demands Facebook Appear at Next Week’s Consumer Protection Subcomm. Hearing to Explain Coverup of its Platforms’ Negative Impact on Teens and Children* (Sept. 21, 2021), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/newsroom/press/release/blumenthal-demands-facebook-appear-at-next-weeks-consumer-protection-subcommittee-hearing-to-explain-coverup-of-its-platforms-negative-impact-on-teens-and-children>.

⁵¹⁹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>; see also *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021) <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower> (statement by Senator Brian Schatz to Frances Haugen that he had “a long list of misstatements, misdirections and outright lies from the company”).

385. Moreover, Satterfield’s “free and frank discussion” excuse has been contradicted both internally and publicly by Meta employees. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵²⁰

386. Frances Haugen echoed this sentiment in her testimony before the Senate, citing evidence that [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵²¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵²²

387. The above representations of former employees are consistent with reports from Facebook content moderators that there is a “culture of fear and excessive secrecy” within Meta that “prevent[s] [them] from speaking out.”⁵²³

388. Notably, Meta’s pattern of concealment did not end after Frances Haugen came forward. On September 30, 2021, Antigone Davis, Facebook’s Head of Safety, testified before the

⁵²⁰ Haugen_00007481 at Haugen_00007492 [REDACTED].

⁵²¹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵²² *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵²³ Zoe Schiffer, *Facebook Content Moderators Call for Company to Put an End to Overly Restrictive NDAs*, The Verge (Jul. 22, 2021), <https://www.theverge.com/2021/7/22/22587757/facebook-content-moderators-ireland-end-restrictive-ndas>.

Senate. Ms. Davis represented that, when Instagram “do[es] ads to young people, there are only three things that an advertiser can target around: age, gender, location. We also prohibit certain ads to young people, including weight-loss ads.”⁵²⁴ She further testified, “We don’t allow the sexualization of minors on our platform.”⁵²⁵

389. Ms. Davis’s statements were subsequently proven false by Senator Mike Lee. During an October 2021 hearing, Senator Lee explained that a group called the Technology Transparency Project (“TTP”) alerted the U.S. Senate that it had gained Facebook’s approval to target a series of harmful ads to up to 9.1 million users between the ages of 13 and 17.⁵²⁶ While TTP did not actually run the ads, approval from Meta to do so demonstrates that the company allows harmful targeted advertising toward minors. Senator Lee showed three examples of these Meta-approved ads, shown below:^{527, 528}

⁵²⁴ Subcomm.: *Protecting Kids Online: Facebook, Instagram, and Mental Health Harms Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection Product Safety, and Data Security* (Sept. 30, 2021),

<https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/9/protecting-kids-online-facebook-instagram-and-mental-health-harms>.

⁵²⁵ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021),

<https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵²⁶ See *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021),

<https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵²⁷ These screen captures were taken from a video of the October 5, 2021 Senate Hearing with witness Frances Haugen. See *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021),

<https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵²⁸ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021),

<https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.



390. The first ad encourages children to “[t]hrow a skittles party like no other” and displays the suggestion against a background of colorful prescription pills. The second ad promotes an “Ana Tip” instructing the viewer to “visit pro-ana sites to feed your motivation and reach your goal” when feeling hungry. The third ad informs the viewer that they “look lonely” and encourages them to “[f]ind your partner now to make a love connection.”

391. Senator Lee stated that based on the Meta Defendants’ approval of these pro-drug, pro-anorexia, pro-sexualization ads targeted to children aged 13 to 17, “[o]ne could argue that it proves that Facebook is allowing and perhaps facilitating the targeting of harmful adult-themed ads to our nation’s children.”⁵²⁹

392. In addition to the litany of misrepresentations and omissions identified above, Meta has repeatedly failed to tell the truth about the age of users on Instagram. In statements to Congress and elsewhere, Zuckerberg has represented that Meta does not allow users under the age of 13 to

⁵²⁹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

use the service. For example, in testimony before the U.S. House of Representatives Committee on Energy and Commerce, Zuckerberg stated: “There is clearly a large number of people under the age of 13 who would want to use a service like Instagram. We currently do not allow them to do that.”⁵³⁰

393. However, as discussed further above, Meta has long known that its platform is widely used by children under the age of 13. In fact, Meta knows through retrospective cohort analyses that “up to 10 to 15% of even 10 year-olds in a given cohort may be on Facebook or Instagram.”⁵³¹ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵³²

394. Indeed, far from acknowledging the serious defects in its platforms and warning children and parents of the same, Meta has launched advertising campaigns designed to encourage more children to use its platforms—by touting the purported safety of those platforms. For example, in a recent television ad, Meta claimed that it “build[s] technology that gives you more control and helps keep you safe” including through its “industry leading AI” and other “tools that

⁵³⁰ *Disinformation Nation: Social Media’s Role in Promoting Extremism and Misinformation Hearing Before H. Energy and Commerce Subcomm. on Communications and Technology* 59 (March 25, 2021), <https://www.congress.gov/117/meeting/house/111407/documents/HHRG-117-IF16-Transcript-20210325.pdf>; see also *Disinformation Nation: Social Media’s Role in Promoting Extremism and Misinformation Hearing Before H. Energy and Commerce Subcomm. on Communications and Technology* 175 (March 25, 2021), <https://www.congress.gov/117/meeting/house/111407/documents/HHRG-117-IF16-Transcript-20210325.pdf> (Zuckerberg: “[O]ur policies on-on the main apps that we offer generally prohibit people under the age of 13 from using the services.”); See also *Transcript of Zuckerberg’s appearance before House committee*, Washington Post (April 11, 2018), https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2018/04/11/transcript-of-zuckerbergs-appearance-before-house-committee/?utm_term=.e7b476fb8ac7&noredirect=on (When asked if it is correct that children can get a Facebook account starting at age 13, Zuckerberg confirmed that it was correct); see also NewSchools Venture Fund, *NewSchools Summit 2011: John Doerr and Mark Zuckerberg on innovation and education* (May 24, 2011), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n03zAOadyMA> (Zuckerberg: “[A]nd so basically, we don’t allow people under the age of 13 on Facebook . . . today we don’t allow people under the age of 13 to sign up”).

⁵³¹ *Protecting Kids Online: Testimony from a Facebook Whistleblower Hearing before Subcomm. On Consumer Protection, Product Safety, and Data Security* (Oct. 5, 2021), <https://www.commerce.senate.gov/2021/10/protecting%20kids%20online:%20testimony%20from%20a%20facebook%20whistleblower>.

⁵³² Haugen_00016728 at Haugen_00016736-Haugen_00016740.

can protect—so you can connect.” This advertisement featured children, as in the screenshot below.



395. Other advertising campaigns have similarly touted Meta’s AI as being a feature that contributes to its platforms’ safety—without disclosing the serious defects identified in this Complaint.

396. In another example of advertising that promotes use by children, a Meta 2021 online advertisement actively highlighted the content available for fifth grade children on its Facebook platform, highlighting the experience of an art teacher who used Facebook to communicate with students during the pandemic—an experience the video noted was “a lot to unpack for little, tiny people.”

E. Meta facilitates the spread of CSAM and child exploitation.

397. Various design features of Meta’s platforms promote and dramatically exacerbate sexual exploitation, the spread of CSAM, sextortion, and other socially maladaptive behavior that harms children.

398. Meta has long known about these outcomes.⁵³³ In 2010, the *Daily Mail* in the United Kingdom reported that a pedophile used Facebook to groom up to 1,000 children for sex. Detectives “praised the ‘brave young people’ who helped catch this predator but attacked Meta, saying “many sickening incidents could have been avoided if the social networking site had installed a ‘panic button’ which allows youngsters to alert authorities if they suspect they were being groomed.”⁵³⁴

399. In 2013, the *Christian Science Monitor* reported that Facebook is a “favorite recruiting ground[]” for child sex traffickers.⁵³⁵

400. In 2017, *The Times* in the U.K. reported that Facebook “failed to take down dozens of images and videos that were ‘flagged’ to its moderators, including . . . several violent paedophilic cartoons” and “a video of an apparent sexual assault on a child.”⁵³⁶

401. In 2019, the *Sunday Times*, also in the U.K., reported that “Instagram is steering paedophiles towards accounts belonging to children as young as 11, who should not be on the platform in the first place.”⁵³⁷

402. Despite its awareness from over a decade of red flags, Meta promotes its platforms as safe and family- friendly and claims that its platform features are designed to remind adolescent

⁵³³ See, e.g., Michael H. Keller and Gabriel J.X. Dance, The Internet Is Overrun With Images of Child Sexual Abuse,” N.Y. Times (Sept. 29, 2019), <https://www.nytimes.com/interactive/2019/09/28/us/child-sex-abuse.html>.

⁵³⁴ Michael Seamark, *Paedophile postman used Facebook and Bebo to groom up to 1,000 children for sex*, DailyMail.com (May 28, 2010), <https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1282157/Facebook-grooming-How-pervert-postman-used-site-groom-hundreds-children.html>.

⁵³⁵ Marjorie Kehe Staff, *Kimberly Ritter stands up to child sex trafficking in US hotels*, The Christian Science Monitor (Mar. 15, 2013), <https://www.csmonitor.com/World/Making-a-difference/2013/0315/Kimberly-Ritter-stands-up-to-child-sex-trafficking-in-US-hotels>.

⁵³⁶ Alexi Mostrous, *Facebook publishing child pornography*, The Times (Apr. 13, 2017), <https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/facebook-publishing-child-pornography-pdgt87nm6?region=global>.

⁵³⁷ Shanti Das & Geoff White, *Instagram sends paedophiles to accounts of children as young as 11*, The Sunday Times (Dec. 1, 2019), <https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/instagram-sends-predators-to-accounts-of-children-as-young-as-11-j2gn5hq83>. [REDACTED] META3047MDL-003-00153063.

users who they are sharing with and to limit interactions with strangers.⁵³⁸ This is simply not the case. Meta not only tolerates child exploitation, it knowingly assists, supports, and/or facilitates child exploitation through its dangerous platform features.

403. Meta also fails to enforce its own policies regarding adolescent users and does not incorporate simple, cost-effective technologies into the design of its platforms that would help reduce the prevalence of CSAM. Adolescent users are harmed by Meta’s dangerously designed platforms, which are unreasonably dangerous for them.

404. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵³⁹ Instagram’s “Suggested for You” and “Because You Watched” features are similarly dangerous because they connect strangers, including adult predators, with adolescent users. As *The Sunday Times* revealed, “[p]redators who follow users posting photos of young models, dancers or gymnasts are shown a stream of other images they will like and targeted with personalised recommendations of accounts to follow. Among the suggested accounts are newly created profiles belonging to children who would otherwise be almost impossible to find unless you had their user name.”⁵⁴⁰

405. Similarly, the absence of effective age verification measures, as described above, allows predators to lie about their ages and masquerade as children, with obvious dangers to the actual children on Meta’s platforms. Prior to November 2022, the default setting for Facebook

⁵³⁸ *Safety Resources for Parents*, Meta Privacy, Safety, and Security
https://www.facebook.com/help/1079477105456277?helpref=faq_content.

⁵³⁹ META3047MDL-003-00013254 at META3047MDL-003-00013255.

⁵⁴⁰ Shanti Das & Geoff White, *Instagram sends paedophiles to accounts of children as young as 11*, *The Sunday Times* (Dec. 1, 2019), <https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/instagram-sends-predators-to-accounts-of-children-as-young-as-11-j2gn5hq83>.

users' profiles allowed posts to be publicly viewable by any user. This allowed predators to discover and connect with adolescent users. The same is true for users' friends lists.

406. Instagram is similarly flawed, having transitioned to private profiles for users under 16 only in July 2021. Up until that change—and even after—millions of minors are left exposed to predation and at risk of extortion and abuse by default. Indeed, *The Sunday Times* reported that “[o]ne of those brought to the surface by Instagram’s algorithm contained selfies of a young girl and a profile description that read: “Hey people hope you decide to follow me im 11.”⁵⁴¹

407. Distressingly, Meta considered [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁵⁴²

408. Meta’s platforms also include direct messaging features. Instagram’s direct messaging system is equipped with a platform feature called a “photo bomb,” which is an image or video sent from a smartphone that automatically disappears from the recipient’s inbox. Both Facebook’s and Instagram’s messaging system also have a “Vanish Mode” option, which makes the message disappear after it has been read.

409. Meta’s messaging features allow users to exchange private messages with other platform users. In addition, users do not have to be connected as friends or followers to initiate conversations, which enables predators to communicate privately with youth, with virtually no evidence of what was exchanged. This feature enables predators to identify children who are willing to respond to a stranger’s message, and then prey on their insecurities. Even though [REDACTED]

⁵⁴¹ Shanti Das & Geoff White, *Instagram sends paedophiles to accounts of children as young as 11*, *The Sunday Times* (Dec. 1, 2019), <https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/instagram-sends-predators-to-accounts-of-children-as-young-as-11-j2gn5hq83>.

⁵⁴² META3047MDL-003-00028226 at META3047MDL-003-00028226; META3047MDL-003-00013254 at META3047MDL-003-00013254.

██████████ as of mid-2020, Meta had ██████████

██████████⁵⁴³ That remained true even after Meta received reports that ██████████

██████████⁵⁴⁴

410. An internal study conducted in or around June of 2020 concluded that ██████████

██████████⁵⁴⁵ Yet, at the time, ██████████

██████████⁵⁴⁶

411. Meta's platforms also permit users to operate multiple accounts simultaneously. Operating multiple accounts enables adolescent users to have multiple unique online identities. In addition, parents are often unaware that more than one account exists and therefore do not monitor the additional accounts as they would the primary, known account. By permitting multiple accounts, Meta compounds children's exposure to danger on its platforms and hampers parents' attempts to monitor their children's activities.

412. Meta's platforms also utilize a location feature that allows users to geotag the location where a photo was taken or from where a post is being made. On Facebook, users can search posts by location and find pages and groups by the location tagged in a user's post. Similarly, Instagram users can use the Explore tool to search for posts based on location tags.

413. Location tagging is inherently dangerous for children, as it identifies where they are located, where they vacation, where they attend school, and so on. Predators can find these posts by searching within specific geographic confines. This enables the identification of potential

⁵⁴³ META3047MDL-003-00028019 at META3047MDL-003-00028019.

⁵⁴⁴ META3047MDL-003-00028019 at META3047MDL-003-00028020.

⁵⁴⁵ META3047MDL-003-00028214 at META3047MDL-003-00028216- META3047MDL-003-00028218.

⁵⁴⁶ META3047MDL-003-00028214 at META3047MDL-003-00028215.

victims in a predator’s area, increasing the risk that adolescent users are targeted for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM.

414. Meta’s policies fail to adequately protect children, especially teens. Meta created its own definition of CSAM that fails to sufficiently meet the clear requirements provided in 18 U.S.C. § 2256(8) and related case law. Meta relies on its own definitions to fail to report harmful CSAM to the authorities as required by law.⁵⁴⁷ For example, Meta utilizes the Tanner Stages, a classification system used to track children’s physical development during puberty, to assist with making moderation decisions related to potential CSAM. The scale’s creator, Dr. James Tanner, has called this approach “wholly illegitimate.”⁵⁴⁸

415. Despite using PhotoDNA and other technology in Facebook’s platform design as early as 2011, Meta has hindered its effectiveness and success by creating its own CSAM definitions and compromising its own detection model.

416. In fact, the United States Department of Justice (“DOJ”) urged Zuckerberg to refrain from implementing dangerous design modifications to his platforms, “embed the safety of the public in system designs,” and “act against illegal content effectively with no reduction to safety,” in ways that safeguard victims.⁵⁴⁹

417. In November of 2021, Meta indicated that it would postpone certain platform design changes, such as encrypting direct messages on Instagram, that would create an increased risk and volume of CSAM within its platforms. However, in January 2022, it implemented those changes to its Messenger application, increasing risks to vulnerable children and the volume of

⁵⁴⁷ Michael H. Keller, *Adults or Sexually Abused Minors? Getting It Right Vexes Facebook*, N.Y. Times (Mar. 31, 2022), <https://www.nytimes.com/2022/03/31/business/meta-child-sexual-abuse.html>.

⁵⁴⁸ Michael H. Keller, *Adults or Sexually Abused Minors? Getting It Right Vexes Facebook*, New York Times, (March 31, 2022), <https://www.nytimes.com/2022/03/31/business/meta-child-sexual-abuse.html>.

⁵⁴⁹ Letter to Mark Zuckerberg from Department of Justice 2 (October 4, 2019), <https://www.justice.gov/opa/press-release/file/1207081/download>.

predators and CSAM without sufficient warning.⁵⁵⁰ In 2019, FBI Director Christopher Wray stated that, with the design decision to encrypt Messenger absent additional protections for children, Facebook would become “a dream-come-true for predators and child pornographers. A platform that allows them to find and connect with kids, and like-minded criminals, with little fear of consequences. A lawless space created not by the American people, or their elected officials, but by the owners of one big company.”⁵⁵¹

418. Even further compounding these problems, Meta has “instructed content moderators for its platforms to ‘err on the side of an adult’ when they are uncertain about the age of a person in a photo or video, according to a corporate training document.”⁵⁵²

419. Shortly after Frances Haugen disclosed how Meta’s platforms harm children, an unnamed whistleblower and former Facebook employee revealed in a five-page document that Meta’s efforts to address the prevalence of CSAM within its platforms were “inadequate” and “under-resourced.”⁵⁵³ This whistleblower also stated that Meta “doesn’t track” the full scale of the CSAM problem within its platforms because senior executives consistently limit the funds available for child protection design efforts, by instead focusing on the company’s “return on investment.”⁵⁵⁴

420. Meta’s failure to monitor its platforms for CSAM and protect its most vulnerable users is all the more shocking considering the troves of data and information it collects about users

⁵⁵⁰ Timothy Buck, *Express Yourself in Messenger’s End-to-End Encrypted Chats*, Messenger News (Jan. 27, 2022), <https://messengernews.fb.com/2022/01/27/express-yourself-in-messengers-end-to-end-encrypted-chats/>.

⁵⁵¹ Raphael Satter & Sarah N. Lynch, *FBI Director Warns Facebook Could Become Platform Of ‘Child Pornographer’*, Reuters (Oct. 4, 2019), <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-facebook-security/fbi-director-warns-facebook-could-become-platform-of-child-pornographers-idUSKBN1WJ1NQ>.

⁵⁵² Michael H. Keller, *Adults or Sexually Abused Minors? Getting It Right Vexes Facebook*, N.Y. Times (Mar. 31, 2022), <https://www.nytimes.com/2022/03/31/business/meta-child-sexual-abuse.html>.

⁵⁵³ Angus Crawford, *Whistleblower: Facebook’s response to child abuse ‘inadequate’*, BBC News, (Oct. 28, 2021) <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-59063768>.

⁵⁵⁴ Angus Crawford, *Whistleblower: Facebook’s response to child abuse ‘inadequate’*, BBC News, (Oct. 28, 2021) <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-59063768>.

to monitor their preferences and lifestyles for advertising clients. Using that same technology, Meta could easily detect, report and take actions to prevent instances of sexual grooming, sextortion, and CSAM distribution on its platforms.

421. Instead of taking these crucial, life-saving actions, Meta misleadingly asserts that when it “become[s] aware of apparent child exploitation, we report it to the National Center for Missing and Exploited Children (NCMEC), in compliance with applicable law.”⁵⁵⁵ But Meta’s response to law enforcement inquiries is often significantly delayed, if they respond at all, and Meta further frustrates law enforcement investigations by failing to promptly to report child sexual exploitation.⁵⁵⁶

422. As a result, Meta’s platforms are polluted with illegal material that promotes and facilitates the sexual exploitation of minors. Meta benefits from increased user activity (and increased advertising revenue) for disseminating these materials on its platforms.

423. Meta knows that its platforms are used for the production, possession, distribution, receipt, transportation, and dissemination of millions of materials that depict obscene visual representations of the sexual abuse of children each year. Meta also knows that its dangerous algorithms worsen the problem: [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵⁵⁷

424. Meta knowingly fails to take adequate and readily available measures to remove these contraband materials from its platforms in a timely fashion.

⁵⁵⁵ Meta, *Meta’s Child Sexual Exploitation, Abuse and Nudity, Facebook Community Standards*, <https://transparency.fb.com/policies/community-standards/child-sexual-exploitation-abuse-nudity/>.

⁵⁵⁶ See Michael H. Keller & Gabriel J. X Dance, *The Internet Is Overrun With Images Of Child Sexual Abuse. What Went Wrong?*, N.Y. Times (Sept. 29, 2019), <https://www.nytimes.com/interactive/2019/09/28/us/child-sex-abuse.html> (describing the proliferation of CSAM on social media apps and the way the apps have hampered law enforcement investigations).

⁵⁵⁷ META3047MDL-003-00068860 at META3047MDL-003-00068861.

425. In violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2258A, Meta knowingly fails to report massive amounts of material in violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2256 and 18 U.S.C. § 1466A.

426. Meta knows, or reasonably should have known, that its platforms are increasingly unsafe for children each year, and yet fails to implement safeguards to prevent children from accessing its platforms.

427. In addition to these dangerous features that enable CSAM and child exploitation, Meta's platforms hamper identification and reporting of CSAM or child pornography. For example, they do not allow a person to report harmful content without first logging into and using the platforms, which requires them to sign up for an account and provide a name and email address.⁵⁵⁸

428. Neither Instagram nor Facebook contain platform features that allow users to report harmful images or videos directly from their direct messaging features.⁵⁵⁹

429. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁵⁶⁰

430. Meta knowingly possessed the capabilities and technologies to incorporate other automatic actions into its platform designs to protect children (including but not limited to immediately disabling or deleting harmful content to minors) but Meta deliberately and willfully failed to do so. Instead, Meta allowed the sexualization and exploitation of minors on their platforms to brazenly continue.

⁵⁵⁸ Canadian Centre for Child Protection, *Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms* 16, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf (last accessed December 28, 2022).

⁵⁵⁹ Canadian Centre for Child Protection, *Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms* 13, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf (last accessed December 28, 2022).

⁵⁶⁰ META3047MDL-003-00009133 at META3047MDL-003-00009134.

431. Meta knowingly failed to invest in adequate CSAM prevention measures, including but not limited to client-side scanning and perceptual hashing.

432. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵⁶¹

433. Meta knowingly failed to design its platforms to proactively detect harmful interactions between adults and minors despite having the technology and capabilities to do so successfully.⁵⁶²

434. Finally, Meta's platforms offer unreasonably inadequate parental controls; for example, parents cannot monitor their child's account without logging into the child's account directly.

435. Collectively, these defects make it difficult for parents to monitor their use of Meta's platforms, and they enable predators to identify, connect to, and exploit children.⁵⁶³

F. Meta failed to adequately warn the public about the dangers and harms caused by Instagram and Facebook, or provide instructions regarding safe use.

436. Meta has failed to adequately warn adolescent users and parents about the physical and mental health risks posed by Instagram and Facebook. These risks include a plethora of mental health disorders like compulsive use, addiction, eating disorders, anxiety, depression, insomnia, exacerbated executive dysfunction, sexual exploitation from adult users, suicidal ideation, self-harm, and death.

⁵⁶¹ See META3047MDL-003-00012994 at META3047MDL-003-00012995- META3047MDL-003-00012996 [REDACTED].

⁵⁶² Hany Farid, *Reining in Online Abuses*, 19 Technology and Innovation 593-599 (2018); META3047MDL-003-00009133 at META3047MDL-003-00009134 ([REDACTED]).

⁵⁶³ Hany Farid, *Reining in Online Abuses*, 19 Technology and Innovation 593-599 (2018), <https://farid.berkeley.edu/downloads/publications/nai18.pdf>.

437. Meta targets adolescent users via advertising and marketing materials distributed throughout digital and traditional media that fail to provide sufficient warnings to potential adolescent consumers of the physical and mental risks associated with using Facebook and Instagram.

438. Meta also fails to adequately warn adolescent users during the platform registration process. At account setup, neither Instagram nor Facebook contain warning labels, banners, or conspicuous messaging to adequately inform adolescent users of the known platform risks and potential physical and mental harms associated with usage. Instead, Meta allows adolescent users, including those under the age of 13, to easily create an account (or multiple accounts) and fully access these platforms.

439. Meta's failure to warn adolescent users continues even as adolescents exhibit problematic signs of addiction to and compulsive use of Facebook or Instagram. For example, Meta does not warn users when their screen time reaches harmful levels or when adolescents are accessing the platform habitually.

440. Despite proactively providing adolescent users with countless filtering and editing tools, Meta also does not appropriately warn adolescent users regarding which images have been altered or the mental health harms associated with the heavily filtered images that Meta presents and recommends.

441. Not only does Meta fail to adequately warn users regarding the risks associated with Instagram and Facebook, it also does not provide sufficient instructions on how adolescents can safely use the platforms.

442. Meta's failure to adequately warn and instruct has proximately caused significant harm to the mental and physical well-being of adolescent users.

IV. FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS AS TO SNAP

443. Snap Inc. calls itself “a camera company.”⁵⁶⁴ Its “flagship product, Snapchat, is a camera application that was created to help people communicate through short videos and images. [Snap] calls each of those short videos or images a Snap.”⁵⁶⁵ Snap’s design of its Snapchat platform capitalizes on children’s increasing attachment to quick, instantaneous exchanges. As Snap’s founder and CEO Evan Spiegel has explained, “today... pictures are being used for talking. So when you see your children taking a zillion photos of things that you would never take a picture of, it’s cos [sic] they’re using photographs to talk. And that’s why people are taking and sending so many pictures on Snapchat every day.”⁵⁶⁶

444. Spiegel’s statement is telling, as Snap has tailored every aspect of its Snapchat platform to children rather than adults. Snap designed and implemented dangerous features in Snapchat that exploit children’s need for social acceptance and rewards by pushing its users to maximize their use of and engagement with the app. Snap built Snapchat using manipulative techniques to compel young users to send an ever-increasing number of photographs and videos, and to reward users who maximize their engagement with elevated status. Snap also dangerously encourages adolescents to increase engagement on the app indiscriminately, pushing tools to share sensitive material with an ever-expanding group of friends and strangers.

445. Snapchat’s design features cause its young users to suffer increased anxiety, depression, disordered eating, sleep deprivation, suicide, and other severe mental and physical

⁵⁶⁴ Snap Inc. Form S-1 Registration Statement at 1 (Feb. 2, 2017), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1564408/000119312517029199/d270216ds1.htm>; see also *Snap – Who We Are*, Snap Inc.; (“We believe that reinventing the camera represents our greatest opportunity to improve the way people live and communicate.”), <https://careers.snap.com/en-US> (“We believe that reinventing the camera represents our greatest opportunity to improve the way people live and communicate.”).

⁵⁶⁵ Snap Inc. Form S-1 Registration Statement at 1 (Feb. 2, 2017), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1564408/000119312517029199/d270216ds1.htm>.

⁵⁶⁶ Stuart Dredge, *What is Snapchat? CEO Evan Spiegel explains it all for parents*, The Guardian, June 15, 2015, <https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2015/jun/17/what-is-snapchat-evan-spiegel-parents>.

injuries. Snap knows or should have known this. Snap intentionally designed Snapchat to prey on the neuropsychology and behavioral patterns of children to maximize their engagement and increase Snap's advertising revenue. Despite this knowledge, Snap continues to update its platform and add features intentionally designed to entice, exploit, and addict kids, including Snap Streaks, trophies, social signifiers and reward systems, quickly disappearing messages, filters, lenses, and games.

446. Snap knew, or should have known, that its conduct has negatively affected youth. Snap's conduct has been the subject of inquiries by the United States Senate regarding Snapchat's use "to promote bullying, worsen eating disorders, and help teenagers buy dangerous drugs or engage in reckless behavior."⁵⁶⁷ Further, Senators from across the ideological spectrum have introduced bills that would ban many of Snapchat's features that are particularly addictive to adolescents.⁵⁶⁸

447. Despite these calls for oversight from Congress, Snap has failed to curtail its use of features such as streaks, badges, and other awards that reward users' level of engagement with Snapchat. As described in detail below, Snapchat is a platform that causes harm to children, the target audience for whom Snap designed and to whom it promoted its platform.

A. Background and overview of Snapchat.

448. Snapchat was created by three college students in 2011 and first released for iPhones in September 2011. Snapchat quickly evolved from its origin as a disappearing-message chat application after Snap's leadership made design changes and rapidly developed new platform

⁵⁶⁷ Bobby Allyn, *4 Takeaways from the Senate child safety hearing with YouTube, Snapchat and TikTok*, National Public Radio (Oct. 26, 2021), <https://www.npr.org/2021/10/26/1049267501/snapchat-tiktok-youtube-congress-child-safety-hearing>.

⁵⁶⁸ See Abigail Clukey, *Lawmaker Aims To Curb Social Media Addiction With New Bill*, National Public Radio (Aug. 3, 2019), <https://www.npr.org/2019/08/03/747086462/lawmaker-aims-to-curb-social-media-addiction-with-new-bill>; Social Media Addiction Reduction Technology Act, S. 2314, 116th Cong. (2019); Kids Internet Design and Safety Act, S. 2918, 117th Cong. (2021).

features. As a result of its design and implementation of dangerous and addictive features specifically targeting youths (described below), Snapchat quickly became widely used among children.

449. Snap marketed Snapchat as “temporary social media” that would allow users to show a more authentic, unpolished, and spontaneous side of themselves.⁵⁶⁹ Snapchat’s central and defining feature, the “Snap,” allows users to send and receive ephemeral, or “disappearing,” audiovisual messages. That feature foreseeably and quickly drove users to exchange sexually explicit “Snaps,” sometimes called “sexts” even though they are photos. Because of its brand identity among millennials as the original ephemeral-messaging app, Snapchat almost immediately became known as the “sexting” app—a fact that Snap was or should have been on notice of from public sources.⁵⁷⁰

450. Snapchat creates images and GIFs for users to incorporate into their videos and picture postings. Snap has also acquired publishing rights to thousands of hours of music and video which it provides to Snapchat users to attach to the videos and pictures that they send.

B. Snap targets children.

1. Snap has designed its Snapchat platform to grow use by children to drive the company’s revenue.

451. Within five months of launching, Snapchat had 40,000 users.⁵⁷¹ By May 2012, less than eight months after launching, CEO Evan Spiegel reported that the company was “thrilled” to

⁵⁶⁹ Jenna Wortham, *A Growing App Lets You See It, Then You Don’t*, New York Times (Feb. 9, 2013), https://www.nytimes.com/2013/02/09/technology/snapchat-a-growing-app-lets-you-see-it-then-you-dont.html?_r=0.

⁵⁷⁰ Megan Dickey, *Let’s Be Real: Snapchat Is Totally Used For Sexting*, Bus. Insider (Nov. 30, 2012), <https://www.businessinsider.com/snapchat-growth-sexting-2012-11>; Billy Gallagher, *No, Snapchat Isn’t About Sexting, Says Co-Founder Evan Spiegel*, TechCrunch (May 12, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/05/12/snapchat-not-sexting/b> (describing an interview in which a journalist asked the CEO of Snap about the platform’s potential use for sexting).

⁵⁷¹ Ken Auletta, *Get Rich U*, New Yorker (Apr. 30, 2012), <https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/04/30/get-rich-u>.

learn that most of Snapchat’s users were high school students sending “behind-the-back photos of teachers and funny faces” to each other during class. According to Spiegel, Snap’s server data showed peaks of activity during the school day.⁵⁷²

452. Snap immediately focused on increasing the platform’s frequency of use.⁵⁷³ By late 2012, Snapchat had over a million active users sending over 20 million Snaps per day.⁵⁷⁴ By 2013, Snapchat users were sending over 60 million Snaps per day.⁵⁷⁵ By the end of 2022, this number has risen to over 5 billion Snaps per day.⁵⁷⁶

453. As Snap continued to quickly add new features to its platform, the number of Snapchat’s daily active users (users who open Snapchat at least once during a 24-hour period) rapidly increased.⁵⁷⁷ In 2017, Snap reported that its users opened the platform more than 18 times a day on average. By 2019, users were opening the platform an average of 30 times per day.⁵⁷⁸

⁵⁷² Team Snapchat, *Let’s Chat*, Snapchat Blog at <http://blog.snapchat.com> (May 9, 2012), <https://web.archive.org/web/20120518003029/http://blog.snapchat.com:80/>.

⁵⁷³ Billy Gallagher, *You Know What’s Cool? A Billion Snapchats: App Sees Over 20 Million Photos Shared Per Day, Releases On Android*, TechCrunch (Oct. 29, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/10/29/billion-snapchats/>.

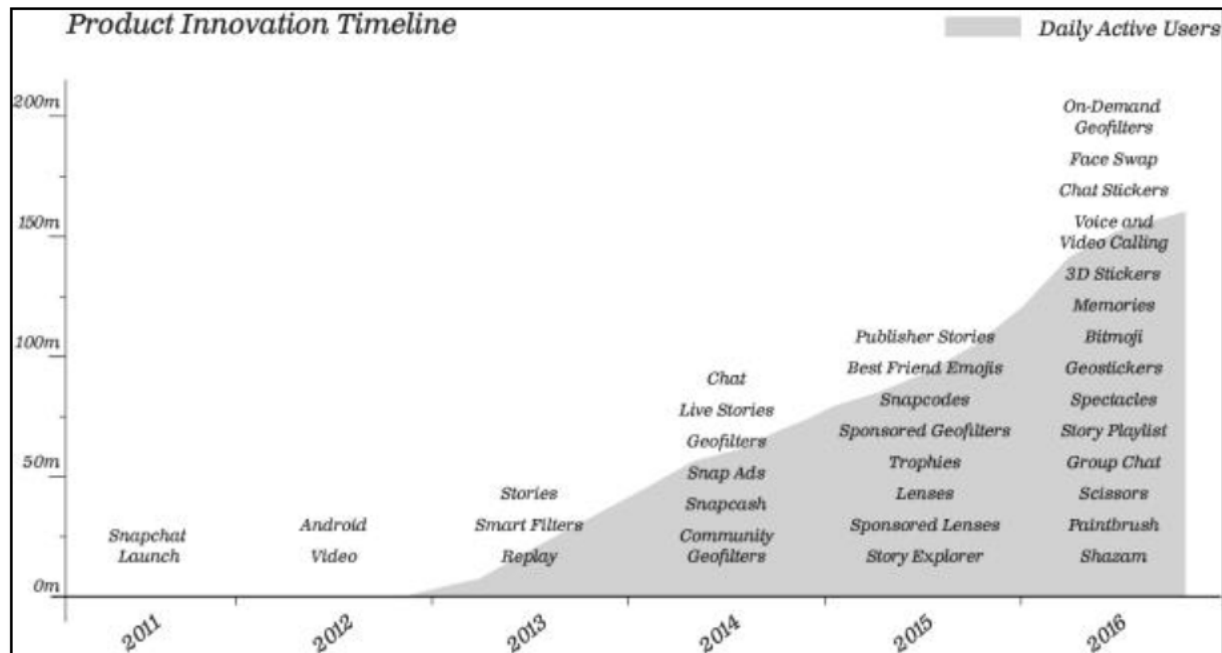
⁵⁷⁴ Billy Gallagher, *You Know What’s Cool? A Billion Snapchats: App Sees Over 20 Million Photos Shared Per Day, Releases On Android*, TechCrunch (Oct. 29, 2012), <https://techcrunch.com/2012/10/29/billion-snapchats/>.

⁵⁷⁵ Billy Gallagher, *Snapchat Raises \$13.5M Series A Led By Benchmark, Now Sees 60M Snaps Sent Per Day*, TechCrunch (Feb. 9, 2013), <https://techcrunch.com/2013/02/08/snapchat-raises-13-5m-series-a-led-by-benchmark-now-sees-60m-snaps-sent-per-day/>.

⁵⁷⁶ Snap Inc. Q4 2022 Investors Meeting Transcript at 7 (Jan. 31, 2023), <https://s25.q4cdn.com/442043304/files/transcript/snap-inc.-q4-2022-transcript.pdf>.

⁵⁷⁷ Snap Inc. Form S-1 Registration Statement at 91 (Feb. 2, 2017), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1564408/000119312517029199/d270216ds1.htm>.

⁵⁷⁸ Snap Inc. Form S-1 Registration Statement at 91 (Feb. 2, 2017), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1564408/000119312517029199/d270216ds1.htm>.



454. Today, Snapchat is one of the world’s most widely used apps. By its own estimates, Snapchat has 363 million daily users, including 100 million daily users in North America.⁵⁷⁹ Snapchat also “reaches 90% of the 13-24 year old population” in over twenty countries, and reaches nearly half of all smartphone users in the United States.⁵⁸⁰

455. Snapchat’s explosive growth is driven by its key user demographic, 13-17 year olds. In 2022, 59% of US teens used Snapchat and 15% said they used it “almost constantly.”⁵⁸¹

582

456. In 2014, Snap began running advertisements on Snapchat.⁵⁸³ Snapchat’s entire business model revolves around its advertising revenue. According to internal company records,

⁵⁷⁹ Snap Inc., October 2022 Investor Presentation at 5 (Oct. 20, 2022), <https://investor.snap.com/events-and-presentations/presentations/default.aspx>.

⁵⁸⁰ Snap Inc., October 2022 Investor Presentation at 6-7 (Oct. 20, 2022), <https://investor.snap.com/events-and-presentations/presentations/default.aspx>.

⁵⁸¹ Pew Research Center, Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022 (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁵⁸² SNAP0000137 at 0139.

⁵⁸³ Angela Moscaritolo, *Snapchat Adds ‘Geofilters’ in LA*, New York, PC Mag. (July 15, 2014), <https://www.pcmag.com/news/snapchat-adds-geofilters-in-la-new-york>.

advertisements were pervasive on Snapchat by 2015 and, by 2018, 99% of Snap’s total revenue came from advertising. Advertising has accounted for 99% of Snap’s revenue each year since 2018.⁵⁸⁴ In 2022, Snap’s revenue was approximately \$4.6 billion.⁵⁸⁵

457. Snap attracts advertisers by providing them access to the huge universe of Snapchat users and by collecting immense amounts of data on its users, including its pre-teen and teenage users, which it uses to target advertising to those users. Snap makes no secret of this practice, recently acknowledging that it relies “heavily on our ability to collect and disclose data, and metrics to our advertisers so we can attract new advertisers and retain existing advertisers. Any restriction or inability, whether by law, regulation, policy, or other reason, to collect and disclose data and metrics which our advertisers find useful would impede our ability to attract and retain advertisers.”⁵⁸⁶

458. Snap’s growth in advertising revenues was driven by changes Snap made to Snapchat that incentivized compulsive and addictive use at the expense of its users’ health. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵⁸⁷ [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁵⁸⁸

⁵⁸⁴ Snap Inc. Form 10-K at 18 (Dec. 31, 2022), <https://d18rn0p25nwr6d.cloudfront.net/CIK-0001564408/c22ae9bd-7418-456e-82d4-48129de1df54.pdf>.

⁵⁸⁵ Snap Inc. Form 10-K at 18 (Dec. 31, 2022), <https://d18rn0p25nwr6d.cloudfront.net/CIK-0001564408/c22ae9bd-7418-456e-82d4-48129de1df54.pdf>.

⁵⁸⁶ Snap Inc. Form 10-K at 18 (Dec. 31, 2022), <https://d18rn0p25nwr6d.cloudfront.net/CIK-0001564408/c22ae9bd-7418-456e-82d4-48129de1df54.pdf>.

⁵⁸⁷ SNAP0000103 at 0120.

⁵⁸⁸ SNAP0000103 at 0113.

459. Snap understands that its user experience must be immersive and all-encompassing in order to maximize its advertising revenue. Indeed, Snap recently admitted to its investors that its revenue could be harmed by, among other things, “a decrease in the amount of time spent on Snapchat, a decrease in the amount of content that our users share, or decreases in usage of our Camera, Visual Messaging, Map, Stories, and Spotlight platforms.”⁵⁸⁹

2. Snap promotes Snapchat to children.

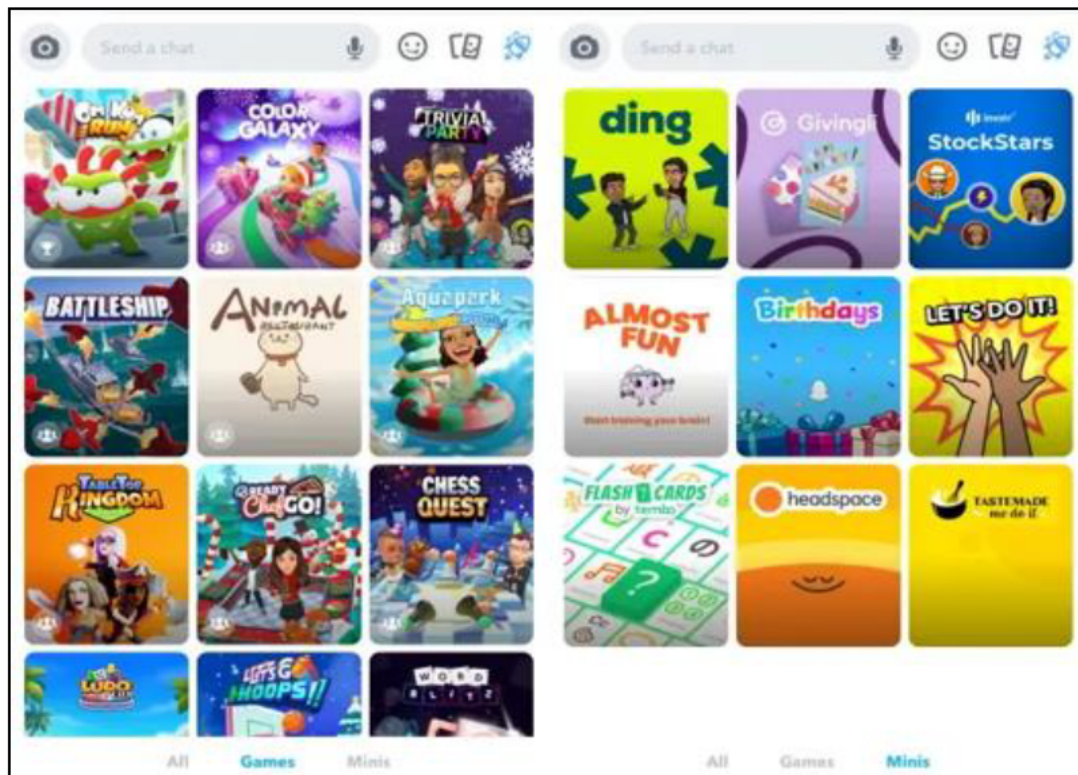
460. Snap specifically promotes Snapchat to children because they are a key demographic for Snap’s advertising business.

461. In its first post on its website, Snapchat observed that “[t]o get a better sense of how people were using Snapchat and what we could do to make it better, we reached out to some of our users. *We were thrilled to hear that most of them were high school students* who were using Snapchat as a new way to pass notes in class—behind-the-back photos of teachers and funny faces were sent back and forth throughout the day.”⁵⁹⁰

462. As shown in this capture of a Snapchat feature page created by Snap, Snap uses bright colors, cartoonish designs, and other features that appeal to younger audiences.

⁵⁸⁹ Snap Inc. Form 10-K at 19 (Dec. 31, 2022), <https://d18rn0p25nwr6d.cloudfront.net/CIK-0001564408/c22ae9bd-7418-456e-82d4-48129de1df54.pdf>.

⁵⁹⁰ Team Snapchat, *Let’s Chat*, Snapchat Blog at <http://blog.snapchat.com> (May 9, 2012), <https://web.archive.org/web/20120518003029/http://blog.snapchat.com:80/>.



463. Similarly, in an October 2019 interview, Snap’s CEO explained that “we’ve seen a lot of engagement with our 13-34 demographic, which for us is strategically a critical demographic, not only because that’s a demographic that enjoys using new platforms but also because I think they represent, really, the future . . . So that’s obviously been a group that’s been really fun to build for, and really it started because those are our friends.”⁵⁹¹

464. Snap touts to advertisers its ability to use Snapchat to reach children. In a December 2022 statement to advertisers, Snap claimed that “Snapchat delivers on the emotions that Gen Z seeks and it does so consistently across the platform in areas like Discover, Stories and the Camera.”⁵⁹² To prove that, Snapchat “used a neuroscience measurement called Immersion to

⁵⁹¹ Evan Spiegel, Co-Founder and CEO of Snap, Inc., Goldman Sachs, at 4:43-6:23. (Oct. 2, 2019), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=POiKv-GCQ-w>.

⁵⁹² Snap for Business, *What Does Gen Z Want From Brands?* Dec. 15, 2022), <https://forbusiness.snapchat.com/en-US/blog/what-does-gen-z-want>.

measure reactions to different brand messaging—specifically brand purpose messaging vs. non-brand purpose messaging. Immersion captures attention and emotional resonance through variations in heart rate rhythm collected by smartwatches.”⁵⁹³ Per Snapchat, “[a]ny brand or marketer can get on any app and *start targeting Gen Z* [emphasis added]. After all, Gen Z is digitally native. But to effectively connect and engage with this generation, that takes a different, more intentional type of platform- Snapchat.”⁵⁹⁴

465. Advertisers have responded, pouring into Snapchat money clearly intended for advertising aimed at children. Brands like candy manufacturer Sour Patch Kids, children’s toy store ToysRUs, and sugary beverage seller Kool-Aid have all run successful advertising campaigns through Snapchat, frequently using augmented reality tools developed in collaboration with Snapchat.

⁵⁹³ Snap for Business, *What Does Gen Z Want From Brands?* Dec. 15, 2022), <https://forbusiness.snapchat.com/en-US/blog/what-does-gen-z-want>

⁵⁹⁴ Snap for Business, *What Does Gen Z Want From Brands?* Dec. 15, 2022), <https://forbusiness.snapchat.com/en-US/blog/what-does-gen-z-want>.



466. Snapchat’s age verification systems are dangerous. For the first two years of its existence, Snap did not even purport to limit user access to those 13 or older.⁵⁹⁵ Users were not required to input a date of birth when creating an account.⁵⁹⁶

467. In 2013, Snap belatedly introduced age limits (which, as explained below, it does not effectively enforce). At the same time, Snap launched a new feature called “Snapkidz” aimed at and designed to attract younger children users, while hedging against the potential user loss due to the new age limits. The Snapkidz feature allowed children under the age of 13 to take filtered photos, draw on them, save them locally on their devices, send them to others, and upload them to other apps.⁵⁹⁷ Although this version prevented children from sharing “Snaps” on the platform, it

⁵⁹⁵ Team Snapchat, *iOS Update: Bug Fixes and More!*, Snapchat Blog (June 22, 2013), <https://web.archive.org/web/20130627073951/http://blog.snapchat.com:80/>.

⁵⁹⁶ Team Snapchat, *iOS Update: Bug Fixes and More!*, Snapchat Blog (June 22, 2013), <https://web.archive.org/web/20130627073951/http://blog.snapchat.com:80/>.

⁵⁹⁷ Team Snapchat, *iOS Update: Bug Fixes and More!*, Snapchat Blog (June 22, 2013), <https://web.archive.org/web/20130627073951/http://blog.snapchat.com:80/>.

nonetheless exposed children to Snapchat’s features, which normalized and acclimatized children to using Snapchat. In addition, nothing prevented children from creating an unrestricted account with a false date of birth on Snapchat and using the platform outside the SnapKidz’s limited features.⁵⁹⁸

468. The SnapKidz feature was discontinued in or around 2016. Snap now purports to prohibit users under the age of 13. But nothing prohibits the minor user from simply altering their birthdate during the same session where they were just denied an account for being an underage user. Snap could have implemented robust, effective age verification protocols. Instead, it has set up its business and platform so that nothing is done to verify the age of its users or to enforce its age limitations. Snap could, but intentionally does not, verify the phone number, email address, or birthdate used to create accounts, and it allows users to create multiple accounts using the same email address or phone number.

469. Snap’s executives have admitted that Snapchat’s age verification “is effectively useless in stopping underage users from signing up to the Snapchat app.”⁵⁹⁹ Not surprisingly, underage use is widespread. As of 2021, 13% of children ages 8-12 use Snapchat.⁶⁰⁰

470. Once Snapchat is installed on a user’s mobile phone, the platform continues to download and install updates, design changes, and new features from Snapchat directly to its users.

⁵⁹⁸ See Larry Magid, *Snapchat Creates SnapKidz – A Sandbox for Kids Under 13*, Forbes (June 23, 2013), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/larrymagid/2013/06/23/snapchat-creates-snapkidz-a-sandbox-for-kids-under-13/?sh=7c682a555e5a>; Anthony Cuthbertson, *Snapchat admits its age verification system does not work*, Independent (Mar. 19, 2019), <https://www.independent.co.uk/tech/snapchat-age-verification-not-work-underage-ageid-a8829751.html>.

⁵⁹⁹ Isobel Asher Hamilton, *Snapchat admits its age verification safeguards are effectively useless*, Bus. Insider (Mar. 19, 2019), <https://www.businessinsider.com/snapchat-says-its-age-verification-safeguards-are-effectively-useless-2019-3>.

⁶⁰⁰ Victoria Rideout *et al.*, *Common Sense Census: Media use by tweens and teens*, 2021 at 5, Common Sense Media, https://www.commonsensemedia.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

471. Similarly, the absence of effective age-verification measures means that users who are older can claim to be children—which is an obvious danger to the actual children on Snap’s platform.

C. Snapchat is designed to addict children through psychological manipulation.

472. Once Snap entices children to use its platform, it uses a series of platform features that are designed to addict children. As laid out below, those features can be broadly grouped into two categories that exploit techniques discussed earlier in this Complaint. The first are social metrics and other similar psychological manipulation techniques. The second are features designed to encourage endless passive consumption of content on the Snapchat platform. These features, in tandem with each other and the other harmful features described throughout this section and Complaint, induce addiction, compulsive use, and other severe mental and physical harm to the child users of the Snapchat platform.

1. Snap designed Snapchat to drive compulsive use through a set of social metrics and other manipulation techniques that induce compulsive use.

473. Snapchat includes a variety of social metrics—such as Snapscores, Snap Streaks, and Snap Awards—that reward users when they engage with Snapchat and punish them when they fail to engage with Snapchat. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] In tandem with Intermittent and Variable Rewards (“IVR”), like push notifications and design choices that make it difficult to stop using the Snapchat platform, these induce compulsive use of the platform by children.

474. These manipulation techniques are so effective in part because Snapchat’s disappearing messages themselves create a compulsion to engage with the Snapchat platform.

Because Snaps typically disappear within ten seconds of being viewed, users feel compelled to reply immediately. Snap activates the psychological desire to reciprocate the social gesture of sending a Snap.⁶⁰¹ Snapchat also tells users each time they receive a Snap by pushing a notification to the recipient's device. These notifications are designed to prompt users to open Snapchat repetitively, increasing the overall time spent on the app.

i. Snapscores

475. Snapscores were one of the earliest features of the Snapchat platform. Almost as soon as Snapchat launched, Snap gave users the ability to draw and color on Snaps and add a short text caption before sending. An Android version of the app, video sharing, and user profiles with “Snapscores” soon followed.⁶⁰²

476. Originally called “Hiscore,” Snapscore keeps a running profile score based on a user's Snapchat activity levels, such as the number of Snaps sent and received or Stories posted.⁶⁰³ The sole purpose of Snapscore is to increase platform use and drive revenue.⁶⁰⁴

⁶⁰¹ Nir Eyal, *The Secret Psychology of Snapchat*, Nir & Far (Apr. 14, 2015), <https://www.nirandfar.com/psychology-of-snapchat/>.

⁶⁰² Snap Inc. Form S-1 Registration Statement at 91 (Feb. 2, 2017), <https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1564408/000119312517029199/d270216ds1.htm>; Katie Notopoulos, *The Snapchat Feature That Will You're your Life*, BuzzFeed News (Dec. 5, 2012),

⁶⁰³ Snapchat Support, *What is a Snap Score?*, (“Your Snapchat score is determined by a super-secret, special equation... 😊”) <https://support.snapchat.com/en-US/a/my-score> (“Your Snapchat score is determined by a super-secret, special equation... 😊”).

⁶⁰⁴ Brad Barbz, *2020 NEW * *How To Increase Snapscore By Up To 1000 Per Minute On IOS And Android - Working 2020*, YouTube (Dec. 4, 2019), https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Mo_tajuofLA.



477. Although Snap does not disclose precisely how Snapscores work, sending and receiving a Snap increases the score by one point. Interacting with other platform features provides additional points. A user's Snapscore is visible on their profile, serves as a signifier of the user's "worth," and encourages users to further engage with Snapchat's features to increase their score. Snapscores are important to users, especially young users, because they operate as a form of social validation, similar to an Instagram "Like." Google has reported millions of searches for "How to improve Snap score." YouTube contains numerous videos with titles like "How to Increase Snapchat Score Fast."⁶⁰⁵

478. Snapscores reward users who post videos that are viewed extensively. This encourages many to use Snapchat in harmful and dangerous ways, to increase the virality of their videos and increase their Snapscore. As more users engage with and forward that video to others, its creator is awarded with an increased Snapscore. Snapchat's rewards incentivize this dangerous behavior, resulting too often in physical harm or humiliation in the obsessive pursuit of social significance.

⁶⁰⁵ FozTech, *How to Increase Snapchat Score Fast! (100% Works in 2023)*, YouTube (Oct. 1, 2019), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=m7s0hvQdTok> (*How to Increase Snapchat Score Fast* has 4.2 million views as of January 10, 2023).

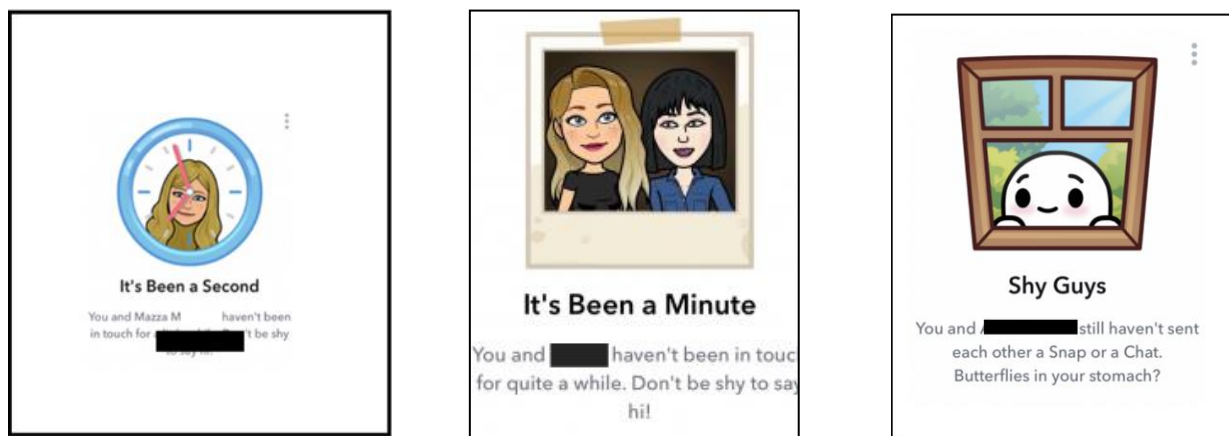
ii. Trophies, Charms, and Stickers

479. Snap has also designed Snapchat to include user rewards, including trophies and other social recognition signals, similar to “Likes” on other apps. These features are highly addictive and drive compulsive use.

480. “Trophies” are emojis awarded for achieving engagement milestones or performing certain activities, such as increasing one’s Snapscore, sending creative Snaps, or posting a live story. A user’s “Trophies” are displayed in a “trophy box” viewable by their friends. Snap designed this feature to encourage users to share their videos and posts with the public, promote greater use of Snapchat, and deepen young users’ addiction to and compulsive use of the platform.

481. In 2020, Snap phased out Trophies and replaced them with “Charms.” Unlike Trophies, where users were rewarded for unlocking individual accomplishments like sending 1,000 selfies, Charms reward users for achieving certain milestones in their relationship with other users. Typically, the more users interact with one another, the more Charms they unlock in their relationship. Charms are private and viewable only by users’ mutual contacts.

482. For example, if two users are at the top of each other’s friends list, meaning they exchange frequent Snaps, they may unlock a “BFF (Best Friends Forever)” Charm. Conversely, the “It’s Been Forever” and “It’s Been a Minute” Charms may be awarded to friends who are infrequently in contact, to prompt their engagement with one another on Snapchat. Although there are a number of different Charms awarded for various reasons, all of them encourage user interaction, furthering engagement and buy-in to Snap’s reward system. This in turn exacerbates social-comparison harms and undermines self-esteem.



483. Snap incorporates other platform features that, like Charms and Trophies, serve no functional purpose, but make Snapchat more appealing and lead to excessive use by children and teens. For example, Snap has developed images called “Stickers” for users to decorate the pictures or videos they post. Snap also offers app-specific emojis and animations that users can apply to their photos or videos.

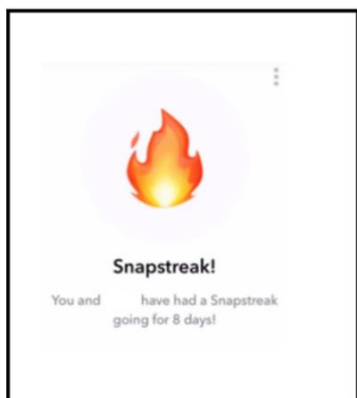
484. Snap designed each of these features to function as rewards for increased engagement, exploit underage users’ desire for social validation, and ultimately compel them to use Snapchat excessively. Because many of these rewards and scores are visible to others, these features tap into adolescents’ deep-seated need for acceptance. By exploiting this need, Snap increases time spent engaging with its platform and thereby its profits.

iii. Snap Streak

485. The “Snap Streak” is unique to Snapchat and is an addictive feature “especially to teenagers.”⁶⁰⁶ A Snap Streak is designed to measure a user’s Snapchat activity with another user.

⁶⁰⁶ See Cathy Becker, *Experts warn parents how Snapchat can hook in teens with streaks*, ABC News (July 27, 2017), <https://abcnews.go.com/Lifestyle/experts-warn-parents-snapchat-hook-teens-streaks/story?id=48778296>; Avery Hartmans, *These are the sneaky ways apps like Instagram, Facebook, Tinder lure you in and get you ‘addicted’*, Bus. Insider (Feb. 17 2018), <https://www.businessinsider.com/how-app-developers-keep-us-addicted-to-our-smartphones-2018-1#snapchat-uses-snapstreaks-to-keep-you-hooked-13>; see generally Virginia Smart & Tyana Grundig, *‘We’re designing minds’: Industry insider reveals secrets of addictive app trade*, CBC (Nov. 3, 2017), <https://www.cbc.ca/news/science/marketplace-phones-1.4384876>; Julian Morgans, *The Secret Ways Social Media is*

Two users achieve a Snap Streak when they exchange at least one Snap in three consecutive 24-hour periods. When the Streak is achieved, users receive a fire emoji next to their profile avatar. Over time, users may be rewarded with additional emojis signifying their Streak. If users reach a Streak of 100 days, for example, each receives a 100 emoji.



486. Snap Streak emojis are similar to Charms in that they reward users for interaction and are viewable only by mutual friends.

487. It is a matter of common knowledge in the social media industry that the Snap Streak platform feature is designed to be addictive. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁶⁰⁷ Nonetheless, Snap continues to provide this feature to its adolescent users.

488. Worse still, to manufacture deeper addiction to its platform, Snap sends notifications to users with an hourglass emoji when Streaks are about to expire—to create extra urgency, nudge users to keep their Streaks alive, and maintain a system where a user must “check constantly or risk missing out.”⁶⁰⁸

Built for Addiction, Vice (May 17, 2017), <https://www.vice.com/en/article/vv5jkb/the-secret-ways-social-media-is-built-for-addiction>.

⁶⁰⁷ Haugen_00008303 at 8307.

⁶⁰⁸ Lizette Chapman, *Inside the Mind of a Snapchat Streaker*, Bloomberg (Jan. 30, 2017), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2017-01-30/inside-the-mind-of-a-snapchat-streaker>.



489. This feature is particularly effective with teenage users since Streaks are “a vital part of using the app and their social lives as a whole.”⁶⁰⁹ Some children become so obsessed with maintaining their Streaks that they give their friends access to their accounts when they may be away from their phone for a day or more.⁶¹⁰ Aware of how important maintaining a Snap Streak is to its users, Snap has even launched a special form on its support website allowing users who lost their streak to petition to get it back.⁶¹¹

490. Snap Streaks contribute to feelings of social pressure and anxiety when users lose or break a Streak. Researchers have found that losing a Streak can cause feelings of betrayal for some users, especially girls, who reported “negative” feelings when losing a Streak with one of their friends.⁶¹²

491. [REDACTED]

⁶⁰⁹ Avery Hartmans, *These are the sneaky ways apps like Instagram, Facebook, Tinder lure you in and get you 'addicted'*, Bus. Insider (Feb. 17, 2018), <https://www.businessinsider.com/how-app-developers-keep-us-addicted-to-our-smartphones-2018-1#snapchat-uses-snapstreaks-to-keep-you-hooked-13>.

⁶¹⁰ Caroline Knorr, *How to resist technology addiction*, CNN (Nov. 9, 2017), <https://www.cnn.com/2017/11/09/health/science-of-tech-obsession-partner/index.html>; Jon Brooks, *7 Specific Tactics Social Media Companies Use to Keep You Hooked*, KQED (June 9, 2017), <https://www.kqed.org/futureofyou/397018/7-specific-ways-social-media-companies-have-you-hooked>.

⁶¹¹ Snapchat Support, Contact Form, <https://support.snapchat.com/en-US/i-need-help?start=5695496404336640>.

⁶¹² Hristoya et al., “*Why did we lose our snapchat streak?*” Social media gamification and metacommunication. *Computers in Human Behavior Reports*, 5, 100172 (2022).

613

492. As this research demonstrates, Streaks are important to users. However, these design features do not enhance the communication function of the platform. Instead, they exploit users' susceptibility to social pressure and to the compulsive accumulation of other rewards, including Snap Score points and Charms.

iv. Push Notifications

493. In addition to Snapchat's in-app reward features, Snap also sends push notifications and emails to encourage addictive engagement and increase use. Notifications are triggered based on information Snap collects from, and about, its users. Snap "pushes" these communications to users excessively and at disruptive times of day. Snap has even designed the format of these notifications to pull users back onto its app by preying on their fear of missing out—never mind the consequences to their health and well-being.

D. Impediments to Discontinuing Use

494. Snap has intentionally and dangerously designed its platforms so child users face significant navigational obstacles and hurdles when trying to delete or deactivate their Snapchat accounts, despite the ease with which a user can create one. For example, when a user elects to delete their account, they cannot do so on demand. The data and the account are preserved for 30 days. In addition, after initiating the deletion process, the user is presented with a black screen depicting a crying emoji and a message that reads, "Your account will be deactivated, which means

⁶¹³ SNAP0000008.

friends won't be able to contact you on Snapchat. You'll also lose any Chats you've saved and Snaps and Chats you haven't opened.”⁶¹⁴

495. This cumbersome process prioritizes user retention and continued use over the well-being of Snapchat's users.

1. Snap's dangerous features are designed to promote compulsive and excessive use.

i. “Stories” and the “Discover” Interface

496. In October 2013, Snap added “Stories,” a feature that generates a compilation of its users' designated photos and videos that expire in 24 hours and can be viewed an unlimited number of times by friends or anyone on Snapchat if the user sets the visibility setting to Everyone.⁶¹⁵ Within eight months of launching the Stories feature, users were viewing more Stories per day than Snaps.⁶¹⁶

497. Snap's Stories feature includes a running view count and list of viewers for each Story, both of which provide users with dopamine-triggering feedback that encourages users to make their Stories visible to everyone in order to increase the view count. The view count, view list, and ephemeral nature of Stories also reinforces the principle of reciprocity and compels users to monitor Stories, so they do not miss out.

498. In 2016, Snap updated the Stories feature to include recommendations based on an algorithm that considers “proximity, time, interestingness, or other such metrics.”⁶¹⁷ That same

⁶¹⁴ See Snapchat Support, *How do I delete my Snapchat account?*, <https://support.snapchat.com/en-US/a/delete-my-account1>

⁶¹⁵ Darrell Etherington, *Snapchat Gets Its Own Timeline With Snapchat Stories, 24-Hour Photo & Video Tales*, TechCrunch (Oct. 3, 2013), <https://techcrunch.com/2013/10/03/snapchat-gets-its-own-timeline-with-snapchat-stories-24-hour-photo-video-tales/>.

⁶¹⁶ Ellis Hamburger, *Surprise: Snapchat's most popular feature isn't snaps anymore*, The Verge (Jun. 20, 2014), <https://www.theverge.com/2014/6/20/5827666/snapchat-stories-bigger-than-snaps-electric-daisy-carnival>

⁶¹⁷ Snapchat, Inc., *Content Collection Navigation and Autoforwarding*, US 20170289234, USPTO (Mar. 29, 2016), <https://patents.justia.com/patent/20170289234>.

year, Snap introduced ads between Stories and updated Stories to include “Auto-Advance,” a feature that starts a new Story automatically after the preceding one ends.⁶¹⁸ This creates an endless cycle of consumption that Snap knows, or should know, is detrimental to users’ mental health.⁶¹⁹ Nevertheless, Snap designed and implemented this feature because it is proven to induce a flow state that increases platform use, regardless of whether the use is healthy or enjoyable. Unsurprisingly, one study of over 2,000 UK residents found 68% of respondents who used Snapchat reported that “the platform prevented them from sleeping.”⁶²⁰

499. Since then, Snap has built upon its Stories interface with “Discover,” a feature that showcases a continuous feed of advertisements to Snapchat’s captive audience. Using Discover, users may subscribe to an advertiser’s “channel” and watch its Stories; as well as see what their friends are watching.

500. Both Stories and Discover encourage user engagement with Snapchat and increase the amount of time users spend using the platform by making the platform more addictive at the expense of users’ mental health and well-being.

ii. “Spotlight”

501. In November 2020, Snap launched “Spotlight,” a feature that pushes to users “an endless feed” that Snap curates from its 300 million daily Snapchat users.⁶²¹ Spotlight functions and appears nearly identical to TikTok, with similar addictive qualities and harms. Snapchat’s

⁶¹⁸ James Vincent, Snapchat will start showing ads between your friends’ stories, The Verge (Jun. 14, 2016), <https://www.theverge.com/2016/6/14/11930386/snapchat-ads-api-stories>; Snapchat, Inc., *Content Collection Navigation and Autoforwarding*, US 20170289234, USPTO (Mar. 29, 2016), <https://patents.justia.com/patent/20170289234>.

⁶¹⁹ See, e.g., Gino Gugushvili et al., Facebook use intensity and depressive symptoms: a moderated mediation mode of problematic Facebook use, age, neuroticism, and extraversion at 3, BMC Psych. 10, 279 (2022), <https://doi.org/10.1186/s40359-022-00990-7>.

⁶²⁰ Frazer Deans, *Curb Your Snapchat Addiction*, <https://www.wholesome.design/advent-2018/2-curb-your-snapchat-addiction/>.

⁶²¹ Salvador Rodriguez, *Snap is launching a competitor to TikTok and Instagram Reels*, CNBC (Nov. 23, 2020), <https://www.cnn.com/2020/11/23/snap-launching-a-competitor-to-tiktok-and-instagram-reels.html>.

Spotlight feature allows users to make videos that anyone can view, and Snap pays users whose Spotlight videos go viral, thus serving as yet another reward system that encourages user engagement. After Snap introduced Spotlight, user time spent on the platform increased by over 200%.⁶²²

502. In February 2022, Snap CEO Evan Spiegel told investors that users are spending more time on Spotlight than almost any other aspect of Snapchat. A year prior, Snap announced “Spotlight Challenges,” which provided users with cash prizes for creating Spotlight videos with specific lenses, sounds, or topics, further integrating the user into the Snap ecosystem. Snap claims it paid out more than \$250 million in cash prizes to Spotlight Challenge participants in 2021 alone.⁶²³

2. Snap designed Snapchat with features that harm children directly or expose children to harm.

503. Snapchat further contains a number of features which foreseeably cause children harm above and beyond harms inherent in addiction and compulsive use.

i. Disappearing “Snaps” and “My Eyes Only” encourage destructive behavior among Snap’s teen users.

504. As discussed above, Snapchat’s “Snap” feature allows users to send and receive ephemeral, or “disappearing,” audiovisual messages. Prior to sending a Snap, a user can designate the period of time—typically no more than a few seconds—that the recipient will be allowed to view the Snap. According to Snapchat, once the allotted time expires, the Snap disappears forever.

⁶²² See *Snap Q4 Earnings Beat Estimates, User Growth Aids Top Line*, Zacks Equity Research (Feb. 5, 2021), <https://finance.yahoo.com/news/snap-q4-earnings-beat-estimates-153003950.html>.

⁶²³ Mia Sato, *Snapchat will put ads within stories and share the money with creators* (Feb. 14, 2022), <https://www.theverge.com/2022/2/14/22927656/snapchat-snap-stars-stories-ads>.

505. Snapchat’s limited display time reduces teenagers’ communication apprehension and encourages users to send photos depicting deviant behavior.⁶²⁴ Sexting is a prime example, but cyberbullying, underage alcohol consumption, and illicit use of narcotics are also commonly the subject of Snaps. A 2016 survey of pre-teens and teens ages 12-17 found that “dick pics” were among some of the unwanted content that users—predominantly females—received while using the app.⁶²⁵

506. Disappearing Snaps do not operate as advertised. Although designed to disappear after an allotted time, recipients possess the ability to save or record them at will. This is particularly harmful to adolescents, who rely on Snap’s representations when taking and sending photos, and who only learn after the fact that recipients have the means to save photos or videos. In some cases, this can lead to sexual exploitation.

507. Snap could, but does not, warn users, including children and teenagers, that Snaps may not necessarily disappear.

508. In addition, and especially for pre-teen users, Snaps are dangerous because Snap’s parental controls are ill-equipped to mitigate the risks posed by this feature. As set forth below, even with parental controls activated, parents are unable to view a Snap’s content and therefore cannot adequately protect their children and/or deter their children from engaging in dangerous behavior in conjunction with sending Snaps.

509. “My Eyes Only” is yet another dangerous feature of Snapchat. This feature enables and encourages users to hide harmful content from their parents in a special tab that requires a passcode. Content cannot be recovered from “My Eyes Only”—allegedly even by Snap itself.

⁶²⁴ See Vaterlaus et al., “Snapchat is more personal”: An exploratory study on Snapchat behaviors and young adult interpersonal relationships, *Computers in Human Behavior*, 62, 594-601 (2016).

⁶²⁵ Kofoed et al., (2106) *A snap of intimacy: Photo-sharing practices among young people on social media*, First Monday 21(11), <https://doi.org/10.5210/fm.v21i11.6905>.

Snap designed “My Eyes Only” knowing it would likely be used to store potentially illegal and injurious photos and images like sexts and CSAM.⁶²⁶ This dangerous platform feature unreasonably increases the risk that Snapchat’s adolescent users, many under age 13, will be targeted and sexually exploited and/or trafficked by child predators.

510. The content in “My Eyes Only” self-destructs if a user attempts to access the hidden folder with the wrong code. “My Eyes Only” has no practical purpose or use other than to hide potentially dangerous content from parents and/or legal owners of the devices used to access Snapchat. Moreover, while this information and evidence should be in Snap’s possession and control, it has designed this feature in a way that causes the permanent loss of relevant, material, and incriminating evidence.

ii. Snapchat’s “Snap Map” feature endangers children.

511. Snapchat also contains a feature called “Snap Map” that allows users to share their location with their followers (and the public) on an activity-level-based, color-coded heatmap. At all relevant times, this feature has been available to all users, including minors. Although users can disable “Snap Map,” this is not a default setting.

512. Snap Map is an unreasonably dangerous feature for underage users because it provides strangers with their locations, exposing children and adolescents to potential harm. Researchers have also found that Snap Map causes feelings of sadness and anxiety for some users, as they jealously view their friends’ locations.⁶²⁷ For young people especially, such social comparison often leads to distress and depression.

⁶²⁶ Salvador Rodriguez, *Snapchat Finally Acknowledges the Existence of Sexting With ‘Memories’* The latest app update includes a tool called “My Eyes Only” that lets you privately store sensitive photos and videos, Inc., (Jul. 6, 2016), <https://www.inc.com/salvador-rodriguez/snapchat-memories-sexting.html>.

⁶²⁷ See Dunn et al., “Oh, Snap! ”: A Mixed-Methods Approach to Analyzing the Dark Side of Snapchat, *The Journal of Social Media in Society*, 9(2), 69-104 (2020).

513. Snap Map also functions as a social metric. A report by 5Rights, a United Kingdom-based children's online safety advocacy group highlighted the experience of John, a 14 year old boy, who explained that "[h]aving more connections on Snapchat makes his Snap Map look more crowded, which he can then show off to people in real life and therefore appear more 'popular.'"⁶²⁸

iii. Snapchat's "Quick Add" feature endangers children.

514. Through a feature known as "Quick Add," Snap recommends new, sometimes random friends, similar to Facebook's "People You Might Know" feature. Suggestions are formulated using an algorithm that considers users' friends, interests, and location. Quick Add encourages users to expand their friend base to increase their Snapscore by interacting with an ever-expanding group of friends, which--in addition to expanding their time online--can result in exposure to dangerous strangers. Of particular concern, until 2022, Quick Add's suggestions included profiles for users Snap knew to be between the ages of 13-17, meaning that Quick Add could, and in fact did, recommend that a minor and adult user connect.

515. Criminal users interested in selling drugs to minors have utilized the Quick Add feature to find random friends interested in making a purchase.

516. Despite these dangers Snap designed Quick Add because it increases the odds that users will add friends, send more Snaps, and spend more time using Snapchat.

517. In 2022, Snap revised the Quick Add feature to limit the friend suggestions promoted to minor users. For those aged 13 to 17, Quick Add would only suggest friends who shared a certain number of common friends with the minor user. Snap did not disclose how many common friends must be shared by each user to satisfy this safety feature. Further, this modification to the Quick Add feature still does not prohibit the connection of minors with adults.

⁶²⁸ 5Rights Foundation, Pathways: How digital design puts children at risk (July 2021), <https://5rightsfoundation.com/uploads/Pathways-how-digital-design-puts-children-at-risk.pdf>.

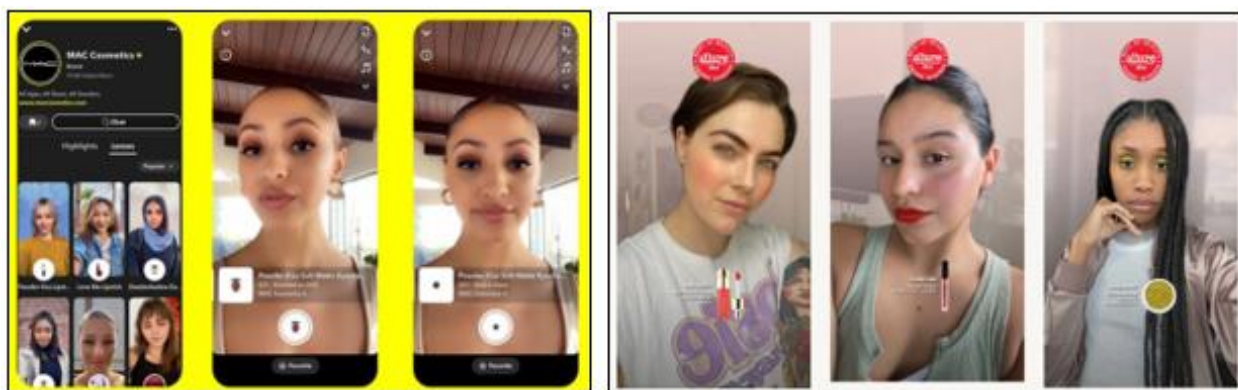
iv. Snapchat's Lenses and Filters features promote negative appearance comparison.

518. Snap also incorporates numerous custom-designed lenses and filters, which allow users to edit and overlay augmented-reality special effects and sounds on their Snaps. Many of Snapchat's lenses and filters change users' appearance and face, creating unrealistic, idealized versions that cause profound body image issues in teenagers, especially girls.

519. Examples of these features include the Smoothing Filter, which blurs facial imperfections and evens out skin tone; Bold Makeup, which adds makeup over the user's face, blurs imperfections, and evens out skin tone; Sunkissed and Cute Freckles, which adds freckles over the nose and cheeks, blurs imperfections, evens out skin tone, and adjusts skin color; Face and Body Mellow Glow, which smooths the face and body and adjusts skin color; and Fluffy Eyelashes, which alters the shape of the user's face by lifting their eyes and adding more pronounced cheek bones. The common theme among all of these filters is that they remove the subjects' perceived blemishes to create the perfect "selfie."



520. A 2017 study found that these features made Snapchat one of the worst social media platforms for the mental health of children and adolescents, behind only Instagram.⁶²⁹ In recent years, plastic surgeons have reported an increase in requests for alterations that correspond to Snapchat's filters. This has led researchers to coin the term "Snapchat Dysmorphia," in which the effect of Snapchat's filters triggers body dysmorphic disorder.⁶³⁰ The rationale underlying this disorder is that beauty filters on Snapchat create a "sense of unattainable perfection" that leads to self-alienation and damages a person's self-esteem.⁶³¹ One social psychologist summarized the effect as "the pressure to present a certain filtered image on social media," which can certainly play into [depression and anxiety] for younger people who are just developing their identities."⁶³²



⁶²⁹ Kara Fox, *Instagram worst social media app for young people's mental health*, CNN (May 19, 2017), <https://www.cnn.com/2017/05/19/health/instagram-worst-social-network-app-young-people-mental-health/index.html>.

⁶³⁰ Chen et al., *Association Between Social Media and Photograph Editing Use, Self-esteem, and Cosmetic Surgery Acceptance*, JAMA Facial Plastic Surgery, 2019; See also Nathan Smith & Allie Yang, *What happens when lines blur between real and virtual beauty through filters*, ABC News (May 1, 2021), <https://abcnews.go.com/Technology/lines-blur-real-virtual-beauty-filters/story?id=77427989>.

⁶³¹ Chen et al., *Association Between Social Media and Photograph Editing Use, Self-esteem, and Cosmetic Surgery Acceptance*, JAMA Facial Plastic Surgery, 2019; See also Nathan Smith & Allie Yang, *What happens when lines blur between real and virtual beauty through filters*, ABC News (May 1, 2021), <https://abcnews.go.com/Technology/lines-blur-real-virtual-beauty-filters/story?id=77427989>.

⁶³² Nathan Smith & Allie Yang, *What happens when lines blur between real and virtual beauty through filters*, ABC News (May 1, 2021), <https://abcnews.go.com/Technology/lines-blur-real-virtual-beauty-filters/story?id=77427989>.

521. Snap also created and promoted “smart filters” that allowed users to stamp date/time, temperature, battery life, altitude, and speed on their Snaps.⁶³³ These filters utilize sensor data on users’ devices to provide the desired filter stamp.

522. A particularly dangerous smart filter is the speed filter, which from 2013 to 2021 allowed users to record their real-life speed and overlay that speed onto Snaps. Snap knew, or should have known, that the speed filter served no purpose other than to motivate, incentivize, and/or encourage users to drive at dangerous speeds in violation of traffic and safety laws. Indeed, soon after launching its speed filter, the feature became a viral game for users—particularly teenage users—to capture photos and videos of themselves driving at 100 miles-per-hour or more. Tragically, the quest to capture a 100 mile-per-hour Snap caused a number of fatal vehicle accidents involving teens and young adults.⁶³⁴

523. Snap knew, or should have known, its speed filter created an unreasonable risk of harm to its users and the public. Despite this knowledge, however, as well as pleas from the public to disable the filter, Snap refused to remove the filter from its application until 2021.⁶³⁵

524. By including features like lenses, cartoonish filters, and stamps to attract ever-increasing numbers of children to use and engage with its platform, Snap has knowingly created a platform that leads to excessive use by children and teens and causes them to suffer harm.

⁶³³ Karissa Bell, *Snapchat adds an altitude filter to show how high you are*, (Aug.19, 2016), <https://mashable.com/article/snapchat-altitude-filter-how-to>.

⁶³⁴ *Did Snapchat play role in deaths of 3 young women?*, ABC6 Action News (Feb. 16, 2016), <https://6abc.com/action-news-investigation-snapchat-fatal-car-crash-philadelphia/1196846/>; Manpreet Darroch, *Snapchat and driving . . . you could be sending your last snap* (Apr.25, 2016), <http://www.youthforroadsafety.org/news-blog/news-blog-item/t/snapchat-and-driving-hellip-you-could-be-sending-your-last-snap>; *The Most Dangerous App on Your Phone*, *DistractedDriverAccidents.com*, <https://distracteddriveraccidents.com/the-most-dangerous-app-on-your-phone/>.

⁶³⁵ Bobby Allyn, *Snapchat Ends ‘Speed Filter’ That Critics Say Encouraged Reckless Driving*, NPR (June 17, 2021), <https://www.npr.org/2021/06/17/1007385955/snapchat-ends-speed-filter-that-critics-say-encouraged-reckless-driving>.

E. Snap has implemented ineffective and misleading parental controls, further endangering children.

525. Snap has also designed and set up Snapchat with inadequate parental controls.

526. From Snapchat's launch in 2011 until August 2022, Snapchat had no parental controls even though its core user base was under the age of 18 and a significant number of those users were under the age of 13.

527. In August 2022, Snap introduced the "Family Center." The features and processes offered through the Family Center are woefully inadequate to protect teen and pre-teen users. The Family Center allows a parent or guardian to install Snapchat on their phone and then link to the child's account. The parent or guardian can then see who the child user is communicating with. However, the content of these communications remains hidden and still disappears after the allotted time. In addition, the Family Center does not allow a parent or guardian to block minors from sending private messages, control their child's use or engagement with many of Snapchat's platform features, control their child's use of Snapchat's geolocation feature, or control who their child may add to their friend list. Finally, the Family Center fails to help a parent monitor their child's account when the child has secretly created a Snapchat account without the parents' knowledge in the first place.

F. Snap facilitates the spread of CSAM and child exploitation.

528. Despite being marketed to and designed for children, Snapchat includes a number of features that promote and dramatically exacerbate sexual exploitation, the spread of CSAM, sextortion, and other socially maladaptive behavior that harms children. Snap knows or should have known that its platform features are unsafe for children and that it fails to implement reasonable, child-protective safeguards. For example, by failing to age-restrict its Discover feature, Snapchat's algorithm has recommended inappropriate sexual content to adolescent users. By

promoting the connection between minors and adults, it is facilitating child exploitation and predation. By failing to implement parental controls that give parents true control over their children's activity, Snap allows harmful interactions with predators to continue unnoticed.

529. Like the other Defendants, as a direct consequence of the child exploitation that occurs on its platform, Snapchat is tainted by illegal material that promotes and facilitates the continued sexual exploitation of minors. Snap receives value in the form of increased user activity for the dissemination of CSAM on its platform.

530. Furthermore, Snapchat's disappearing-content design, while appealing to minors, makes it more difficult for parents to monitor their children's social-media activity. This feature also contributes to a sense of impunity for many users, encouraging and fomenting exploitation and predatory behavior, which has been observed in multiple empirical studies.⁶³⁶ According to these studies, Snapchat users believe their conduct is hidden and accordingly feel empowered to engage in criminal behavior through the platform without fear of getting caught.

531. These feelings are promoted by design. Snap intends for the platform's disappearing messaging to entice users to share highly personal photos and information that many users would otherwise feel uncomfortable sharing on "higher-stake" apps.⁶³⁷ In short, this design choice encourages and allows minors to share harmful, illegal, and sexually explicit images while providing predators with a vehicle to recruit victims. Studies have also found that the "close ties" generated between teenagers on Snapchat foster the conditions for grooming and other predatory behavior.

⁶³⁶ *Snapchat by the Numbers: Stats, Demographics & Fun Facts*, Omnicore (Mar. 2, 2022), <https://www.omnicoreagency.com/snapchat-statistics/>.

⁶³⁷ See Evelyn Lopez et al., *The Gratifications of Ephemeral Marketing Content, the Use of Snapchat by the Millennial Generation and Their Impact on Purchase Motivation*, *Global Bus. Rev.* (2021), <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/pdf/10.1177/09721509211005676>.

532. As a result, Snapchat is one of the go-to platforms for sexual predators.⁶³⁸

533. In 2014, Snap introduced “Snapcash,” a peer-to-peer mobile payment service. Snapcash provided a way for users to pay for private content with little to no oversight.⁶³⁹ Snapcash enabled CSAM and other sexual exploitation, as users were paid with Snapcash to send, receive, create, publish, save, accept, or otherwise participate in CSAM. It also enabled predators to extort cash from adolescent users by threatening to disseminate CSAM to other users.

534. Snapcash was abruptly removed from Snapchat in 2018 as users were sending sexually explicit photos and using Snapcash for payment.⁶⁴⁰

535. Snapchat also allows users to voice or video call one another in the app.⁶⁴¹ This feature is dangerous when paired with the many others that permit easy access to minors by predators, such as Quick Add and Snap Map. It allows predators to call and video chat with minors in private, with virtually no evidence of what was exchanged. Predators use this function to identify children willing to add and speak with a stranger, and then prey on the child’s vulnerabilities.

536. Collectively, these platform features promulgate communication and conduct with a false sense of intimacy between users and encourage predators to use Snapchat to target children for grooming, sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM.

537. In November 2019, a bipartisan group of Senators sent a letter to leading tech companies, including Snapchat. The letter sought answers about the online sexual grooming of

⁶³⁸ See, e.g., Rebecca Woods, *What Are The Dangers Of Snapchat To Avoid?*, PhoneSpector (June 16, 2021), <https://phonespector.com/blog/what-are-the-dangers-of-snapchat-to-avoid/>.

⁶³⁹ Kurt Wagner, *Snapchat to Let You Send Money to Friends, Thanks to Square*, Vox, <https://www.vox.com/2014/11/17/11632930/snapchat-to-let-you-send-money-to-friends-thanks-to-square>.

⁶⁴⁰ Christian Hargrave, *Snapcash Goes Away After Excessive Feature Misuse*, App Developer Magazine (July 25, 2018), <https://appdeveloper magazine.com/snapcash-goes-away-after-excessive-feature-misuse/>.

⁶⁴¹ Snapchat Support, *How to Start a Video Chat on Snapchat*, <https://support.snapchat.com/en-GB/a/video-chat#:~:text=You%20can%20Video%20Chat%20with,into%20a%20full%2Dscreen%20Chat>.

children and CSAM detection technologies.⁶⁴² The following year, ParentsTogether, a national parent group, delivered a petition from 100,000 parents to Snap demanding that the company do more to “protect children from sexual abuse and exploitation” on Snapchat.⁶⁴³ The petition listed numerous examples of widespread online sexual grooming of children, including: a high school coach in New Mexico who used Snapchat to extort sexual videos from several girls as young as fourteen; a Cleveland man who posed as a therapist and blackmailed a thirteen-year-old girl into sending him sexual videos and photos; and a Virginia man who was arrested for running a sextortion ring on Snapchat, coercing children into sending sexually explicit material.⁶⁴⁴

538. In response, Snap announced that by Fall of 2020, it would deploy technology in addition to Microsoft’s PhotoDNA to help stop the spread of CSAM through its platform.

539. By failing to utilize these technologies until late 2020, Snap harmed adolescent users as its platform contributed to child exploitation, sextortion, and the spread of CSAM.

540. In addition, while Snapchat allows users to report harmful images or videos, they cannot specifically report CSAM that is sent to a user via direct messaging, including from another user’s camera roll.

541. Snapchat’s disappearing messages cannot be reported at all.

542. While Snap states that it is using “technology to identify *known* illegal images and videos of CSAM and report them to NCMEC,” it does not address how Snapchat’s design contributes to the ongoing proliferation of CSAM materials and the sexual exploitation of its adolescent users.

⁶⁴² Letter to Sundar Pichai and 36 other Tech Companies by Senate Committee (Nov. 18, 2019), <https://www.blumenthal.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/11.18.19%20-%20Google%20-%20CSAM.pdf>.

⁶⁴³ Snapchat: Prevent Pedophiles from Sharing Abuse Videos, <https://parents-together.org/snapchat-petition>.

⁶⁴⁴ Snapchat: Prevent Pedophiles from Sharing Abuse Videos, <https://parents-together.org/snapchat-petition>.

543. Utilizing the data and information it collects about Snapchat’s users, Snap could detect, report, and take actions to prevent instances of sexual grooming, sextortion, and CSAM distribution.

544. Despite receiving numerous reports regarding how its platform’s features contribute to child exploitation, Snap has elected to keep many of these features in place.⁶⁴⁵ It has done so because removing them would significantly diminish Snapchat’s popularity and negatively impact profits.

545. Notwithstanding these glaring flaws, Snap advertises and promotes its platform as safe and fun. Snap’s Vice President of Global Public Policy, Jennifer Stout, stated in written testimony to a Senate Subcommittee that Snap takes “into account the unique sensitivities and considerations of minors when we design platforms”⁶⁴⁶ when, in fact, Snap intentionally designed its platform to promote compulsive and excessive use and help underage users conceal information from their parents. Stout claimed that Snap makes it harder for strangers to find minors when, in fact, Snapchat’s “Quick Add” feature is responsible for introducing minors to complete strangers, and its “Snap Map” feature has enabled threats, exploitation, and location of minors by complete strangers. Likewise, Snap’s Head of Global Platform Safety, Jacqueline Beauchere, represented to the public that “Snapchat is designed for communications between and among real friends; it doesn’t facilitate connections with unfamiliar people like some social media platforms.”⁶⁴⁷ But again, this is not true and/or historically was not the case.

⁶⁴⁵ See, e.g., Zak Doffman, *Snapchat Has Become A ‘Haven For Child Abuse’ With its ‘Self-Destructing Messages’*, Forbes (May 26, 2019), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/zakdoffman/2019/05/26/snapchats-self-destructing-messages-have-created-a-haven-for-child-abuse/?sh=411b8e1d399a>.

⁶⁴⁶ Snap’s Senate Congressional Testimony - Our Approach to Safety, Privacy and Wellbeing, <https://values.snap.com/news/senate-congressional-testimony-our-approach-to-safety-privacy-and-wellbeing>.

⁶⁴⁷ Snap’s Meet Our Head of Global Platform Safety, <https://values.snap.com/news/meet-our-head-of-global-platform-safety>.

546. In addition, Snap knows or should have known, that its platforms facilitate and encourage the production, possession, distribution, receipt, transportation, and dissemination of millions of materials that exploit children and violate child pornography laws. Snap further knows, or should have known, that its platform facilitates the production, possession, distribution, receipt, transportation, and dissemination of materials that depict obscene visual representations of the sexual abuse of children.

547. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

⁶⁴⁸

G. Snap failed to adequately warn the public about the harms its platform causes or provide instructions regarding safe use.

548. Since Snap's inception, it has failed to warn adolescent users about its platforms' physical and mental health risks. These risks include, but are not limited to, addiction, compulsive and excessive use, sexual exploitation by adult users, dissociative behavior, social isolation, and an array of mental health disorders like body dysmorphia, anxiety, depression, and insomnia.

549. Snap targets adolescent users via advertising and marketing materials distributed via digital and traditional media, including expensive advertisements placed during high-profile sporting events. Snap fails to warn the targets of these ads—often minors—about the physical and mental risks associated with using Snapchat.

⁶⁴⁸ See SNAP0000001-SNAP0000002.

550. Snap further fails to warn adolescent users during the platform registration process. At account setup, Snap's platform contains no warning labels, banners, or conspicuous messaging to adequately inform adolescent users of the known risks and potential physical and mental harms associated with usage of its platform. Instead, Snap allows adolescent users to easily create an account (or multiple accounts) and fully access the platform.

551. Snap's lack of adequate warnings continues after an adolescent has the Snapchat platform. Snap does not adequately inform adolescent users that their data will be tracked, used to help build a unique algorithmic profile, and potentially sold to Snap's advertising clients, who will in turn use the data to target and profile the user.

552. Alarming, Snap also does not warn adolescent users before facilitating adult connections and interactions that adult predators use its platform. It also fails to instruct adolescent users on ways to avoid unknown adults on Snap.

553. Snap also fails to warn adolescent users who exhibit problematic signs of addiction or are habitually and compulsively accessing the app. Instead, Snap utilizes push notifications to encourage engagement with Snapchat.

554. In addition, despite proactively providing adolescent users with countless filtering and editing tools, Snap does not warn its adolescent users regarding the mental health harms associated with those heavily filtered images.

555. Snap also does not warn users that:

- a. adult predators target children and teenagers for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM on Snap's platform;
- b. usage of its platform can increase the risk of children being targeted and sexually exploited by adult predators;

- c. usage of its platform can increase risky and uninhibited behavior in children, making them easier targets for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM by adult predators; and,
- d. end-to-end encryption and/or ephemeral nature of Snap's direct messaging platform prevents the reporting of CSAM.

556. Snap's failure to properly warn and instruct adolescent users has proximately caused significant harm to adolescent users' mental and physical well-being.

557. Snap also fails to warn parents about all of the foregoing dangers and harms.

558. Snap's failure to adequately warn and instruct proximately caused significant harm to adolescent users' mental and physical well-being.

V. FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS AS TO BYTEDANCE

559. Since its launch, TikTok has grown exponentially. In late 2021, its owner and creator ByteDance publicly stated that TikTok had 1 billion active global users, up from 55 million in early 2018 and 700 million in mid-2020.⁶⁴⁹ One internal marketing strategy document reported

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁶⁵⁰

560. A large swath of TikTok's user base is comprised of American children. In July 2020, TikTok reported that more than one-third of its 49 million daily users in the United States were 14 or younger.⁶⁵¹ More recently, a 2022 Pew Research Center survey reported that 67% of American teenagers (age 13-17) use TikTok, with most American teenagers (58%) using the platform daily. Among teenage TikTok users, a quarter say they use the site or app almost

⁶⁴⁹ Jessica Bursztynsky, *TikTok says 1 billion people use the app each month*, CNBC (Sept. 27, 2021), <https://www.cnbc.com/2021/09/27/tiktok-reaches-1-billion-monthly-users.html>.

⁶⁵⁰ TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00000622 at *27.

⁶⁵¹ Raymond Zhong & Sheera Frenkel, *A Third of TikTok's U.S. Users May Be 14 or Under, Raising Safety Questions*, N.Y. Times (Aug. 14, 2020), <https://www.nytimes.com/2020/08/14/technology/tiktok-underage-users-fig.html>.

constantly.⁶⁵² In another recent report, more than 13% of young users declared they “wouldn’t want to live without” TikTok.⁶⁵³

561. TikTok’s capture of the American youth market is no accident, but instead the result of a carefully executed campaign. Early on, Alex Zhu, one of TikTok’s creators, recognized that “[t]eenagers in the U.S. [were] a golden audience” for this emerging social media platform.⁶⁵⁴ To cash in on this gold, ByteDance implemented a series of platform features designed to attract and addict young users. As Zhu explained in 2019, “[e]ven if you have tens of millions of users, you have to keep them always engaged.”⁶⁵⁵ This engagement has come at the cost of young users’ health.

A. Background and overview of TikTok.

562. In 2012, Beijing-based technologist Zhang Yiming paired up with an American venture capitalist, Matt Huang, to launch ByteDance and its first platform Jinri Toutiao (“Today’s Headlines”), which utilized A.I. to gather and present world news to users on a single feed.

563. Following the success of its first platform, ByteDance created Douyin in 2016, a music-based app loosely modeled on the popular app Musical.ly. Musical.ly was a critical hit in the U.S. as American teens gravitated to the platform, which allowed users, including minor users, to create 15-second videos of themselves lip-syncing, dancing, or goofing around to popular songs and movie scenes, and then post them to a scrollable feed for other users to see.

⁶⁵² Emily Vogels *et al.*, *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022/>.

⁶⁵³ Victoria Rideout *et al.*, *Common Sense Census: Media use by tweens and teens, 2021* at 31, Common Sense Media (2022), www.commonsensemedia.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

⁶⁵⁴ Paul Mozur, *Chinese Tech Firms Forced to Choose Market: Home or Everywhere Else*, N.Y. Times (Aug. 9, 2016), <https://www.nytimes.com/2016/08/10/technology/china-homegrown-internet-companies-rest-of-the-world.html>.

⁶⁵⁵ Biz Carson, *How A Failed Education Startup Turned into Musical.ly, The Most Popular App You’ve Probably Never Heard Of*, Bus. Insider (May 28, 2016), <https://www.businessinsider.com/what-is-musically-2016-5> (emphasis added).

564. In 2017, ByteDance launched TikTok, a version of Douyin for the non-Chinese market, and acquired Musical.ly, which by then boasted a user base of almost 60 million monthly active users, for \$1 billion. Nine months later, ByteDance merged its newly acquired app into its existing platform, and a global version of TikTok was born.

565. Douyin is a version of TikTok that is exclusively for Chinese users. ByteDance’s design of Douyin is profoundly different than TikTok. Douyin serves its Chinese users educational and patriotic content and limits their use to just 40 minutes per day.⁶⁵⁶ TikTok, in sharp contrast, has no usage limits and is designed to encourage addictive and compulsive use. Far from promoting educational content, TikTok’s algorithm instead actively sends its young American users down a harmful rabbit hole of artificially filtered “ideal” body images and dangerous viral challenges.

B. ByteDance intentionally encourages youth to use its platform and then leverages that use to increase revenue.

566. ByteDance has designed and aggressively marketed TikTok, the harmful and addictive version of Douyin, to attract young Americans.

567. Like the other Defendants’ platforms, TikTok depends on advertising revenue, which has boomed. TikTok was projected to receive \$11 billion in advertising revenue in 2022, over half of which is expected to come from the United States.⁶⁵⁷

568. The initial iteration of TikTok allowed users to lip sync pop music by celebrities who appealed primarily to teens and tweens (e.g., Selena Gomez and Ariana Grande). It labeled folders with names attractive to youth (e.g., “Disney” and “school”); and included in those folders

⁶⁵⁶ Sapna Maheshwari, *Young TikTok Users Quickly Encounter Problematic Posts, Researchers Say*, N.Y. Times (Dec. 14, 2022), <https://www.nytimes.com/2022/12/14/business/tiktok-safety-teens-eating-disorders-self-harm.html>.

⁶⁵⁷ Jessica Bursztynsky, *TikTok says 1 billion people use the app each month*, CNBC (Sept. 27, 2021), <https://www.cnbc.com/2021/09/27/tiktok-reaches-1-billion-monthly-users.html>; Bhanvi Staija, *TikTok’s ad revenue to surpass Twitter and Snapchat combined in 2022*, Reuters (Apr. 11, 2022), <https://www.reuters.com/technology/tiktoks-ad-revenue-surpass-twitter-snapchat-combined-2022-report-2022-04-11/>.

songs such as “Can You Feel the Love Tonight” from the movie “The Lion King,” “You’ve Got a Friend in Me” from the movie “Toy Story,” and other renditions covering school-related subjects or school-themed television shows and movies.⁶⁵⁸

569. ByteDance also specifically and intentionally excluded videos that would not appeal to young Americans, instructing TikTok moderators that videos of “senior people with too many wrinkles” should not be permitted on users’ “For You” pages because such content was “much less attractive [and] not worth[] . . . recommend[ing].”⁶⁵⁹

570. Even TikTok’s sign-up process demonstrates that young users are what ByteDance values most. In 2016, the birthdate for those signing up for the app defaulted to the year 2000 (i.e., 16 years old).⁶⁶⁰

C. ByteDance intentionally designed platform features to addict children and adolescents.

571. TikTok’s growth among young Americans has been further enabled by its dangerous age verification and parental control procedures, which allow children under 13 unfettered access to the app.

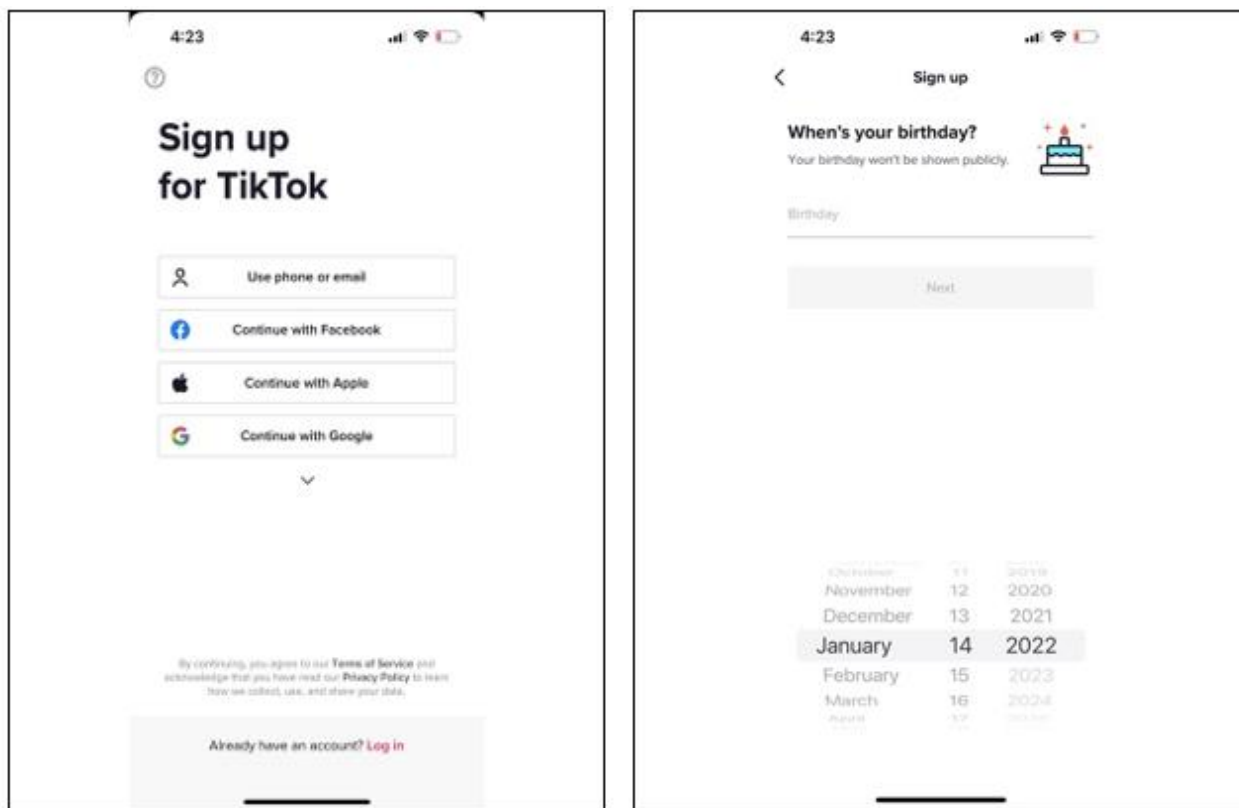
1. TikTok’s age-verification measures are dangerous.

572. When a user first opens TikTok, they are prompted to “Login in to TikTok” or “Sign up” for an account using a phone number or email address. TikTok then asks, “When’s your birthday?”

⁶⁵⁸ Complaint for Civil Penalties, Permanent Injunction, and Other Equitable Relief, *United States v. Musical.ly*, No. 2:19-cv-01439-ODW-RAO, Doc. 1 ¶¶ 26–27 (C.D. Cal. Feb. 27, 2019).

⁶⁵⁹ Sam Biddle et al., *Invisible Censorship: TikTok Told Moderators to Suppress Posts by “Ugly” People and the Poor to Attract New Users*, Intercept (Mar. 15, 2020), <https://theintercept.com/2020/03/16/tiktok-app-moderatorsusers-discrimination/>.

⁶⁶⁰ Melia Robinson, *How to Use Musical.ly, The App With 150 million Users That Teens Are Obsessed With*, Bus. Insider (Dec. 7, 2016), <https://www.businessinsider.com/how-to-use-musically-app-2016-12>.



573. ByteDance does not verify the age that TikTok users report. Nor does it use any method to verify that users who acknowledge they are minors have the consent of their parents or legal guardians to use the platform. In fact, at least as of 2020, TikTok still had not developed a company position on age verification.⁶⁶¹

574. ByteDance has designed TikTok so users can circumvent TikTok's age restrictions by using TikTok without creating an account. TikTok allows users, no matter what age, to "browse as [a] guest," and watch TikTok's "For You" page while TikTok's algorithm collects data about that user and their viewing behavior.⁶⁶²

⁶⁶¹ TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00060941 at *85 [REDACTED].

⁶⁶² *Browse as Guest*, TikTok Support, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/log-in-troubleshoot/log-in/browse-as-guest>.

575. ByteDance knows that many U.S. TikTok users under the age of 13 fail to report their birth dates accurately.⁶⁶³

576. ByteDance’s Trust and Safety team recognizes that one of the biggest challenges it faces is [REDACTED]⁶⁶⁴

577. In 2019, the FTC acted on this admission and alleged that ByteDance failed to comply with COPPA.⁶⁶⁵

578. TikTok settled the FTC claims, agreeing to a then-record civil COPPA penalty and several forms of injunctive relief intended to protect children who use the platform.⁶⁶⁶

579. To comply with the terms of that settlement, ByteDance created “TikTok for Younger Users,” a “limited app experience” for users under the age of 13.⁶⁶⁷ “TikTok for Younger Users” does not permit users to “share their videos, comment on others’ videos, message with users, or maintain a profile or followers.”⁶⁶⁸ However, users can still “experience what TikTok is at its core” by recording and watching videos on TikTok. For that reason, experts state the app is “designed to fuel [kids’] interest in the grown-up version.”⁶⁶⁹

⁶⁶³ Jon Russell, *Musical.ly Defends its Handling of Young Users, As it Races Past 40M MAUs*, TechCrunch (Dec. 6, 2016), <https://techcrunch.com/2016/12/06/musically-techcrunch-disrupt-london/>.

⁶⁶⁴ TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00060811 at *16.

⁶⁶⁵ See Complaint for Civil Penalties, Permanent Injunction, and Other Equitable Relief, *United States v. Musical.ly*, No. 2:19-cv-01439-ODW-RAO, Doc. 1 ¶¶ 26–27 (C.D. Cal. Feb. 27, 2019).

⁶⁶⁶ Natasha Singer, *TikTok Broke Privacy Promises, Children’s Groups Say*, NY Times (May 14, 2020), <https://www.nytimes.com/2020/05/14/technology/tiktok-kids-privacy.html#:~:text=TikTok%2C%20the%20popular%20app%20for%20making%20and%20sharing,20%20children%E2%80%99s%20and%20consumer%20groups%20said%20on%20Thursday.>

⁶⁶⁷ *TikTok for Younger Users*, TikTok (Dec. 13, 2019), <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/tiktok-for-younger-users>.

⁶⁶⁸ Dami Lee, *TikTok Stops Young Users from Uploading Videos after FTC Settlement*, Verge (Feb. 27, 2019), <https://www.theverge.com/2019/2/27/18243510/tiktok-age-young-user-videos-ftc-settlement-13-childrensprivacy-law>.

⁶⁶⁹ Leonard Sax, *Is TikTok Dangerous for Teens?*, Inst. Fam. Stud. (Mar. 29, 2022), <https://ifstudies.org/blog/istiktok-dangerous-for-teens>.

580. Moreover, users under 13 can easily delete their age-restricted accounts and sign up for an over-13 account on the same mobile device—without any restriction or verification—using a fake birthdate.

581. The absence of effective age verification measures also means that adult users claim to be children—with obvious dangers to the children on ByteDance’s platform.

2. TikTok’s parental controls are dangerous.

582. Following the FTC settlement, ByteDance created a “Family Pairing” feature on TikTok. The supposed purpose of that feature was to allow parents to link their accounts to their children’s accounts and enforce certain controls (such as screen time limits and restriction of “content that may not be appropriate for all audiences”).⁶⁷⁰

583. “Family Pairing” also is supposed to allow parents to prevent their children from direct messaging other TikTok users. But ByteDance has designed TikTok’s “Family Pairing” feature so that it is not mandatory for minor users. And to use it, a parent or guardian is forced to create their own TikTok account to pair it with their child’s account. Further, the “Family Pairing” feature is available only on the TikTok app. It provides no protection when a child accesses TikTok through a web browser. Because this feature requires parents to know the name of their child’s account to pair it, youth can easily evade the protections of the “Family Pairing” feature by creating anonymous accounts, again without parental approval or knowledge.

584. ByteDance further stymies parents’ ability to supervise minors’ use of TikTok by permitting minor users to block their parent’s profile, post ephemeral videos called “Stories” that disappear after 24 hours, and post those stories to “Friends Only.”

⁶⁷⁰ *TikTok Introduces Family Pairing*, TikTok Newsroom (April 15, 2020) <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/tiktok-introduces-family-pairing>.

585. ByteDance could, but does not, adopt safety features that notify parents when minors are engaging excessively with the platform and are using it during sleeping hours.

586. Until January 13, 2021, ByteDance interfered with parental supervision and endangered children by defaulting all accounts, including those registered to children as young as 13, to “public.” That allowed strangers to contact minor users regardless of age or location. ByteDance also intentionally and actively promoted these types of connections by suggesting accounts to follow through the “Find Friends” or “People You May Know” features.

587. Today, for users 16 and over, ByteDance still sets the default privacy setting for all registered accounts to “public,” meaning that anyone can view a user’s profile, on or off TikTok, request the user as a friend, or engage with the user’s content.⁶⁷¹

3. ByteDance intentionally designed TikTok’s dangerous features and algorithms to maximize engagement using automatic content, time-limited experiences, intermittent variable rewards, reciprocity, and ephemeral content.

588. Like each of the other Defendants, ByteDance has designed and coded TikTok with features that foster addictive and compulsive use by youth, leading to a cascade of additional mental and physical injuries.

589. One of TikTok’s defining features is its “For You” page (or “FYP”). According to ByteDance, it is “central to the TikTok experience and where most of our users spend their time.”⁶⁷²

590. TikTok’s FYP uses ByteDance’s powerful machine-learning algorithms to select content to feed users to maximize their engagement and thereby serve ByteDance’s interests—as

⁶⁷¹ See, e.g., Lauren E. Sherman et al., *The Power of the Like in Adolescence: Effects of Peer Influence on Neural and Behavioral Responses to Social Media*, 27(7) Psych. Sci. 1027–35 (July 2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5387999>.

⁶⁷² *How TikTok recommends videos #ForYou*, TikTok (June 18, 2020), <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/howtiktok-recommends-videos-for-you>.

opposed to simply responding to searches by users. As one industry commentator explained, TikTok uses “a machine-learning system that analyzes each video and tracks user behavior so that it can serve up a continually refined, never-ending stream of TikToks optimized to hold [users’] attention.”⁶⁷³ As another commentator put it, “you don’t tell TikTok what you want to see. It tells you.”⁶⁷⁴

591. Zhu has remarked that, “[e]ven if you have tens of millions of users, you have to keep them always engaged.”⁶⁷⁵ Thus, according to Zhu, TikTok’s algorithms are “focused primarily on increasing the engagement of existing users.”⁶⁷⁶

592. An internal document titled “TikTok Algo 101,” which TikTok has confirmed is authentic, “explains frankly that in the pursuit of the company’s ‘ultimate goal’ of adding daily active users, it has chosen to optimize for two closely related metrics in the stream of videos it serves: ‘retention’—that is, whether a user comes back—and ‘time spent.’”⁶⁷⁷

593. “This system means that watch time is key,” explained Guillaume Chaslot, the founder of Algo Transparency.⁶⁷⁸ Chaslot noted that “rather than giving [people] what they really want,” TikTok’s “algorithm tries to get people addicted[.]”⁶⁷⁹

⁶⁷³ Jia Tolentino, *How TikTok Holds Our Attention*, New Yorker (Sept. 30, 2019), <https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2019/09/30/how-tiktok-holds-our-attention>.

⁶⁷⁴ Drew Harwell, *How TikTok Ate the Internet*, Wash. Post. (Oct. 14, 2022), <https://www.theday.com/business/20221015/how-tiktok-ate-the-internet/>.

⁶⁷⁵ Biz Carson, *How a Failed Education Startup Turned Musical.ly, the Most Popular App You’ve Probably Never Heard Of*, Business Insider (May 28, 2016), <https://www.businessinsider.com/what-is-musically-2016-5> (emphasis added).

⁶⁷⁶ Joseph Steinberg, *Meet Musical.ly, the Video Social Network Quickly Capturing the Tween and Teen Markets*, Inc. (June 2, 2016), <https://www.inc.com/joseph-steinberg/meet-musically-the-video-social-network-quicklycapturing-the-tween-and-teen-m.html>.

⁶⁷⁷ Ben Smith, *How TikTok Reads Your Mind*, N.Y. Times (Dec. 5, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/12/05/business/media/tiktok-algorithm.html>.

⁶⁷⁸ Ben Smith, *How TikTok Reads Your Mind*, N.Y. Times (Dec. 5, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/12/05/business/media/tiktok-algorithm.html>.

⁶⁷⁹ Ben Smith, *How TikTok Reads Your Mind*, N.Y. Times (Dec. 5, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/12/05/business/media/tiktok-algorithm.html>.

594. To fulfill this goal, the TikTok algorithm responds to a user’s time spent watching and engaging with a video by feeding them similar content.⁶⁸⁰ As TikTok describes it, the algorithms populate each user’s FYP feed by “ranking videos based on a combination of factors” that include, among others, any interests expressed when a user registers a new account, videos a user likes, accounts they follow, hashtags, captions, sounds in a video they watch, certain device settings, such as their language preferences and where they are located, and finally the likelihood of the user’s interest.⁶⁸¹

595. ByteDance has designed TikTok’s algorithm so that certain factors, such as time spent watching a video, are more important to the algorithm than others. For example, TikTok explains that, “whether a user finishes watching a longer video from beginning to end, would receive greater weight than . . . whether the video’s viewer and creator are both in the same country.”⁶⁸²

596. TikTok’s algorithms are designed to begin working the minute a user opens the app. The FYP shows the user a single, full-screen stream of videos, then records how the user reacts. “A second of viewing or hesitation indicates interest; a swipe suggests a desire for something else.”⁶⁸³ With each data point collected, TikTok’s algorithm winnows a mass of content to a single feed, continually refined to keep users engaging often and at length.

⁶⁸⁰ Kaitlyn Tiffany, *I’m Scared of the Person TikTok Thinks I Am*, The Atlantic (June 21, 2021), <https://www.theatlantic.com/technology/archive/2021/06/your-tiktok-feed-embarrassing/619257/>.

⁶⁸¹ *Investigation: How TikTok’s Algorithm Figures Out Your Deepest Desires*, Wall St. J. (Jul. 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/video/series/inside-tiktoks-highly-secretive-algorithm/investigation-how-tiktok-algorithm-figures-out-your-deepest-desires/6C0C2040-FF25-4827-8528-2BD6612E3796>; *see also* *How TikTok recommends videos #ForYou* / TikTok Newsroom, <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/how-tiktok-recommends-videos-for-you>.

⁶⁸² *Investigation: How TikTok’s Algorithm Figures Out Your Deepest Desires*, Wall St. J. (Jul. 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/video/series/inside-tiktoks-highly-secretive-algorithm/investigation-how-tiktok-algorithm-figures-out-your-deepest-desires/6C0C2040-FF25-4827-8528-2BD6612E3796>; *see also* *How TikTok recommends videos #ForYou* / TikTok Newsroom, <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/how-tiktok-recommends-videos-for-you>.

⁶⁸³ *Investigation: How TikTok’s Algorithm Figures Out Your Deepest Desires*, Wall St. J. (Jul. 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/video/series/inside-tiktoks-highly-secretive-algorithm/investigation-how-tiktok-algorithm-figures-out-your-deepest-desires/6C0C2040-FF25-4827-8528-2BD6612E3796>; *see also* *How TikTok recommends videos #ForYou* / TikTok Newsroom, <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/how-tiktok-recommends-videos-for-you>.

597. This algorithmic encouragement of continuous scrolling and interaction makes it hard for users to disengage from the app. A recent ByteDance-funded study, which imaged the brains of TikTok and other social media platform users, found that those using TikTok engaged with the platform about 10 times a minute, twice as often as with peer apps.⁶⁸⁴

598. ByteDance leverages users' inability to disengage as a benefit to attract advertisers, rather than taking steps to address the addictive nature of its platform. A recent TikTok marketing document observed that "the TikTok audience is fully leaned in."⁶⁸⁵ Marketing research commissioned by TikTok found that compared to other social media sites, TikTok users evidenced a higher frequency of rate per minute. TikTok boasted, "[o]ur algorithm and shorter video formats create continuous cycles of engagement, making TikTok the leading platform for Information Density."⁶⁸⁶

599. ByteDance also creates images and GIFs for users to incorporate into TikTok videos to keep users returning to the platform. And ByteDance has acquired publishing rights to thousands of hours of music and video, which it provides its users to attach to the videos and pictures they post on TikTok.

600. TikTok's powerful machine-learning algorithms dictate the content of each user's FYP. An estimated 90-95% of the content viewed on TikTok comes from its algorithms (as opposed to user selection), the highest among Defendants' platforms.⁶⁸⁷

⁶⁸⁴ *TikTok Ads Break Through Better Than Tv and Drive Greater Audience Engagement*, TikTok, <https://www.tiktok.com/business/library/TikTokDrivesGreaterAudienceEngagement.pdf>.

⁶⁸⁵ *TikTok Ads Break Through Better Than Tv and Drive Greater Audience Engagement*, TikTok, <https://www.tiktok.com/business/library/TikTokDrivesGreaterAudienceEngagement.pdf>.

⁶⁸⁶ *TikTok Ads Break Through Better Than Tv and Drive Greater Audience Engagement*, TikTok, <https://www.tiktok.com/business/library/TikTokDrivesGreaterAudienceEngagement.pdf>.

⁶⁸⁷ *Investigation: How TikTok's Algorithm Figures Out Your Deepest Desires*, Wall St. J. (Jul. 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/video/series/inside-tiktoks-highly-secretive-algorithm/investigation-how-tiktok-algorithm-figures-out-your-deepest-desires/6C0C2040-FF25-4827-8528-2BD6612E3796>.

601. The algorithm encourages use of the platform, regardless of whether that use is enjoyable or healthy. From TikTok’s perspective, it doesn’t matter whether you’re engaging with a video because you’re horrified or angry or upset—the engagement itself is the end goal.

602. As the algorithm continues to refine what users see, they are “more likely to encounter harmful content.”⁶⁸⁸ Indeed, TikTok’s quest to monopolize user attention often forces users down “rabbit holes” of harmful content. Users end up in these rabbit holes, and become trapped in them, because TikTok has optimized its algorithm’s design for retention and time spent on the app.⁶⁸⁹ TikTok wants to keep users coming back as often as possible for as long as possible.

603. Once users are in a rabbit hole, it is extremely difficult to climb out. One user was shown a few anti-vaccination conspiracy theory videos on his FYP and commented on them in an attempt to refute the videos’ claims. His feed was quickly overtaken with similar videos, and it took him months of intentional interaction with the app to purge this content from his FYP.⁶⁹⁰ In general, escaping a rabbit hole requires a user to repeatedly and actively strategize ways to counter the algorithm, pitting individual users’ David against TikTok’s machine-learning Goliath.

604. The Wall Street Journal documented the pernicious operation of ByteDance’s algorithms, as shown by a recent experiment. The experimenters used bots, each programmed with various interests such as sports, forestry, dance, astrology, and animals. They did not disclose these interests upon registration with TikTok. Instead, TikTok’s algorithm quickly learned the assigned

⁶⁸⁸ *Inside TikTok’s Algorithm: A WSJ Video Investigation*, Wall St. J. (July 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-video-investigation-11626877477>.

⁶⁸⁹ Ben Smith, *How TikTok Reads Your Mind*, N.Y. Times (Dec. 5, 2021), <https://www.nytimes.com/2021/12/05/business/media/tiktok-algorithm.html>.

⁶⁹⁰ Kaitlyn Tiffany, *I’m Scared of the Person TikTok Thinks I Am*, The Atlantic (June 21, 2021), <https://www.theatlantic.com/technology/archive/2021/06/your-tiktok-feed-embarrassing/619257/>.

interests from the bots’ behavior—that is, “by rewatching or pausing on videos” related to the bot’s programmed interest.⁶⁹¹

605. One bot watched 224 videos in 26 minutes, lingering over videos with hashtags for “depression” or “sad.” The algorithm quickly refined its output. Afterward, 93% of the videos TikTok showed that bot were about depression or sadness. One post implored the bot to: “Just go. Leave. Stop trying. Stop pretending. You know it and so do they. Do Everyone a favor and leave.”⁶⁹²

606. ByteDance’s choices about how to design and structure its app—including choosing not to implement effective age gating and parental controls, in addition to choosing to design algorithms to maximize engagement through pushing extreme and outrageous content—go far beyond benignly organizing the content of others. Instead, they create an environment and experience suited to ByteDance’s goal of maximizing ad revenues—an environment and experience that is unreasonably dangerous to the children and teens ByteDance targets.

607. In a follow-up experiment by the Wall Street Journal, bots were registered as users between 13 and 15 years-old. One of those bots, programmed to pause on videos referencing drugs, lingered briefly on “a video of a young woman walking through the woods with a caption” referring to “stoner girls.” The next day, the algorithm showed the bot a video about a “marijuana-themed cake.” Then, the “majority of the next thousand videos” that TikTok’s algorithm produced “tout[ed] drugs and drug use,” including marijuana, psychedelics, and prescription drugs.⁶⁹³

⁶⁹¹ *Inside TikTok’s Algorithm: A WSJ Video Investigation*, Wall St. J. (July 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-video-investigation-11626877477>.

⁶⁹² *Inside TikTok’s Algorithm: A WSJ Video Investigation*, Wall St. J. (July 21, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-video-investigation-11626877477>.

⁶⁹³ Rob Barry et al., *How TikTok Serves Up Sex and Drug Videos to Minors*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 8, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-sex-drugs-minors-11631052944>.

608. The algorithm immersed another bot—registered as a 13-year-old boy—into a rabbit hole of videos related to bondage and sex, including videos explaining, among other things, “how to tie knots for sex, recover from violent sex acts and discussing fantasies about rape.”⁶⁹⁴ The bot simply searched for the term “onlyfans”—a site known for hosting adult entertainment—and watched a handful of videos in the results before returning to the FYP.⁶⁹⁵ The algorithm subsequently bombarded the bot with videos about sex and, as the bot lingered on those videos, the bot’s feed became almost entirely dominated by sex-related videos. At one point, “more than 90 percent of [the] account’s video feed was about bondage and sex.”⁶⁹⁶

609. The Wall Street Journal concluded “that through its powerful algorithms, TikTok can quickly drive minors—among the biggest users of the app—into endless spools of content about sex and drugs.”⁶⁹⁷ In another follow-up experiment, the Wall Street Journal found that once TikTok’s algorithm determined that the bots would rewatch videos related to weight loss, it “speedily began serving more, until weight-loss and fitness content made up more than half their feeds—even if the bot never sought it out.”⁶⁹⁸

610. Indeed, TikTok’s algorithm recommended over 32,000 weight-loss videos over a two-month period, “many promoting fasting, offering tips for quickly burning belly fat and pushing weight-loss detox programs and participation in extreme weight-loss competitions.”⁶⁹⁹

⁶⁹⁴ Rob Barry et al., *How TikTok Serves Up Sex and Drug Videos to Minors*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 8, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-sex-drugs-minors-11631052944>.

⁶⁹⁵ Rob Barry et al., *How TikTok Serves Up Sex and Drug Videos to Minors*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 8, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-sex-drugs-minors-11631052944>.

⁶⁹⁶ Rob Barry et al., *How TikTok Serves Up Sex and Drug Videos to Minors*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 8, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-sex-drugs-minors-11631052944>.

⁶⁹⁷ Rob Barry et al., *How TikTok Serves Up Sex and Drug Videos to Minors*, Wall St. J. (Sept. 8, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/tiktok-algorithm-sex-drugs-minors-11631052944>.

⁶⁹⁸ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

⁶⁹⁹ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

611. Alyssa Moukheiber, a treatment center dietitian, explained that TikTok’s algorithm can push children into unhealthy behaviors or trigger a relapse of disordered eating.⁷⁰⁰ Indeed, several teenage girls interviewed by the Wall Street Journal reported developing eating disorders or relapsing after being influenced by extreme diet videos TikTok promoted to them.⁷⁰¹

612. Their experiences are not unique. Katie Bell, a co-founder of the Healthy Teen Project, explained that “the majority of her 17 teenage residential patients told her TikTok played a role in their eating disorders.”⁷⁰²

613. Others, like Stephanie Zerwas, an Associate Professor of Psychiatry at the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, could not even recount how many of her young patients told her that “I’ve started falling down this rabbit hole, or I got really into this or that influencer on TikTok, and then it started to feel like eating-disorder behavior was normal, that everybody was doing that.”⁷⁰³

614. In December 2022, the Center for Countering Digital Hate (“CCDH”) conducted a similar study, creating TikTok accounts with a registered age of 13 in the United States, United Kingdom, Canada, and Australia.⁷⁰⁴ For the first 30 minutes on the app, the accounts paused briefly on videos about body image and mental health and liked them. “Where researchers identified a recommended video matching one of the below categories, they viewed the video for 10 seconds

⁷⁰⁰ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *‘The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

⁷⁰¹ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *‘The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

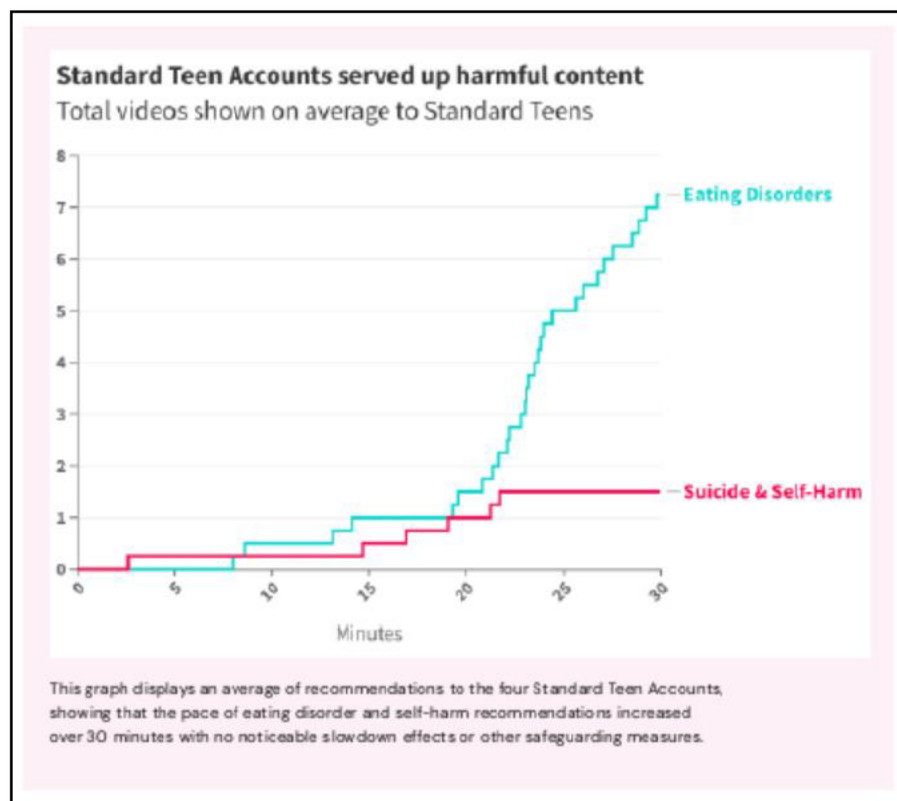
⁷⁰² Tawnell D. Hobbs, *‘The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

⁷⁰³ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *‘The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

⁷⁰⁴ *Deadly by Design*, Center for Countering Digital Hate (Dec. 2022), https://counterhate.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/12/CCDH-Deadly-by-Design_120922.pdf.

and liked it. For all other videos, researchers would immediately scroll the For You feed to view the next video recommended by TikTok.”⁷⁰⁵ TikTok’s algorithm seized on this information and within minutes began recommending content about eating disorders and self-harm.

615. The CCDH report further illustrated TikTok’s algorithms at work, noting that, for an account that liked content about body image and mental health, the algorithm recommended similar content every 39 seconds. As the 30 minutes went on, TikTok recommended more videos related to eating disorders, suicide, and self-harm, as the graph below shows.



616. TikTok’s rabbit holes are particularly problematic for young people, who lack the necessary impulse control to stop watching. The more the user engages by viewing or hesitating on a particular piece of content, the more TikTok’s algorithms learn about the user. ByteDance

⁷⁰⁵ Tawnell D. Hobbs, *‘The Corpse Bride Diet’: How TikTok Inundates Teens With Eating-Disorder Videos*, Wall St. J. (Dec. 17, 2021), <https://www.wsj.com/articles/how-tiktok-inundates-teens-with-eating-disorder-videos-11639754848>.

uses this feature to exploit the vulnerabilities of children and teenagers, and addict them to its platform.

617. Indeed, ByteDance admits that its recommendation algorithm creates a “risk of presenting an increasingly homogeneous stream of videos.”⁷⁰⁶ As the above-referenced studies and experiments demonstrate, that homogeneous stream often includes harmful content, including posts about depression, self-harm, drugs, and extreme diets.

618. Rather than preventing children from falling down these harmful rabbit holes or encountering harmful content, ByteDance threw up its hands, insisting [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]⁷⁰⁷

619. ByteDance uses a series of interrelated design features that exploit known mental processes to induce TikTok’s users to use the platform more frequently, for more extended periods, and with more intensity (i.e., providing more comments and likes). ByteDance knows or should have known that children, whose brains are still developing, are particularly susceptible to these addictive features.

620. TikTok is dangerous in part because ByteDance designed the app so users cannot disable the auto-play function on the FYP.⁷⁰⁸ As noted above, when a user opens the TikTok app or visits the TikTok website, the platform immediately begins playing a video on the user’s FYP. The user may request more videos with a simple upward swipe, and the platform will deliver a seemingly endless content stream. If a user does not proceed from a video, it continues to play on

⁷⁰⁶ *How TikTok recommends videos #ForYou*, TikTok (June 18, 2020), <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/howtiktok-recommends-videos-for-you>.

⁷⁰⁷ TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00060817.

⁷⁰⁸ *2 Best Ways You Can Turn off TikTok Autoplay*, Globe Calls (Dec. 16, 2022), <https://globecalls.com/2-best-ways-you-can-turn-off-tiktok-autoplay/>.

an endless loop. The ability to scroll continuously induces a “flow-state” and distorts users’ sense of time.

621. The TikTok app interface is designed with only a limited number of buttons and sections of the app for users to navigate, such that the design does not impede “flow.”

622. The FYP also leverages principles of IVR to encourage compulsive usage, in the same fashion as Instagram Reels. A user swipes to receive the next video, and each swipe offers the prospect (but not the certainty) of dopamine-releasing stimuli.

623. The cumulative effect of these features is addictive, compulsive engagement. As researchers at the Brown University School of Public Health explained, “the infinite scroll and variable reward pattern of TikTok likely increase the addictive quality of the app as they may induce a flow-like state for users that is characterized by a high degree of focus and productivity at the task at hand.”⁷⁰⁹

624. Dr. Julie Albright, a Professor at the University of Southern California, similarly explained that TikTok is so popular because users will “just be in this pleasurable dopamine state, carried away. It’s almost hypnotic, you’ll keep watching and watching.” Users “keep scrolling,” according to Dr. Albright, “because sometimes you see something you like, and sometimes you don’t. And that differentiation—very similar to a slot machine in Vegas—is key.”⁷¹⁰

625. Aza Raskin, the engineer who designed infinite scroll, described the feature as being “as if [social media companies are] taking behavioral cocaine and just sprinkling it all over your interface, and that’s the thing that keeps you coming back and back and back.” Because the

⁷⁰⁹ Sophia Petrillo, *What Makes TikTok So Addictive? An Analysis of the Mechanisms Underlying the World’s Latest Social Media Craze*, Brown Undergraduate J. of Pub. Health (Dec. 13, 2021), <https://sites.brown.edu/publichealthjournal/2021/12/13/tiktok/>.

⁷¹⁰ John Koetsier, *Digital Crack Cocaine: The Science Behind TikTok’s Success*, Forbes (Jan. 18, 2020), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/johnkoetsier/2020/01/18/digital-crack-cocaine-the-science-behind-tiktoks-success/?sh=765d1b4178be>.

infinite scroll does not “give your brain time to catch up with your impulses . . . you just keep scrolling.”⁷¹¹

626. To reinforce this addictive experience, ByteDance intentionally omits the concept of time from their platform, stripping information such as when a user uploaded a video from its endless stream of content. In the FYP, there is no way to discern how long ago the video was posted, or when the user who posted the video joined TikTok.

627. On at least some phones, TikTok is designed to cover the clock displayed at the top of user’s iPhones, preventing them from keeping track of the time spent on TikTok.⁷¹²

628. ByteDance has designed the app so that users can see, however, how many times a video was liked, commented on, or shared. So, the only thing users can quantify within the app is the approval or disapproval of others.

629. In June 2022, after receiving public criticism regarding its platform’s effects on people’s mental health, ByteDance introduced various tools to purportedly encourage users to take a break from infinite scrolling, such as a “Take a Break” reminder and time-limit caps. ByteDance could but does not activate these tools by default. Even for minors, once they have exceeded 100 minutes of usage a day, TikTok only “reminds” them that these “Take a Break” tools exist upon opening the app, but does not automatically activate them by default.

630. In addition to the dangerous infinite scroll, ByteDance has designed TikTok so it has other design features that exploit social psychological impulses to induce children to use TikTok daily and for extended periods of time, adding to the platform’s addictive nature.

⁷¹¹ John Koetsier, *Digital Crack Cocaine: The Science Behind TikTok’s Success*, Forbes (Jan. 18, 2020), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/johnkoetsier/2020/01/18/digital-crack-cocaine-the-science-behind-tiktoks-success/?sh=765d1b4178be>.

⁷¹² Louise Matsakis, *On TikTok, There is No Time*, Wired (October 3, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/tiktok-time/>.

631. Several TikTok features actively encourage users to generate ephemeral photos and videos. This defect promotes compulsive use, because users risk missing the content posted by their friends and others if they do not check TikTok at least daily.

632. A TikTok user can, for example, post expiring “Stories,” short videos that disappear after 24 hours. These videos do not otherwise appear in a user’s feed. TikTok’s live stream feature is similar.⁷¹³

633. A relatively new feature, “TikTok Now,” pushes daily notifications to users to share “authentic, real-time images or 10-second videos at the same time as your friends.”⁷¹⁴ ByteDance designed this feature so that once a user gets the notification, the user has three minutes to post an image or video. That user cannot view friends’ “TikTok Now” posts without sharing one of their own, and posts submitted outside of the three-minute window are marked as “late.” TikTok preserves a user’s history in a calendar view, adding to the pressure to visit the app daily and when notified by TikTok to do so. ByteDance designed these dangerous features to increase responsiveness to notifications and keep young users locked into the platform, as they do not want to miss out on this perceived social activity.

634. Like “Snap Streaks,” “TikTok Now” does not enhance the communication function of the platform, but simply exploits young users’ susceptibility to persuasive design, teenage social anxiety, and FOMO. ByteDance’s insidious design of “TikTok Now” also employs point scoring and competition with others to drive frequent and continuous engagement by children, who otherwise risk checking in late and alienating other peers participating in the exchange.

⁷¹³ Hilary Anderson, *Social media apps are ‘deliberately addictive to users*, BBC (July 4, 2018), <https://www.bbc.com/news/technology-44640959>.

⁷¹⁴ *TikTok Now*, TikTok, <https://www.tiktok.com/creators/creator-portal/product-feature-updates/tiktok-now>.

635. Like the other Defendants' apps, ByteDance designed TikTok to leverage the principle of IVR by encouraging users to like, share, or reshare videos that others have created or posted. Receiving a "Like" or "Reshare" indicates that others approve of that user's content and satisfies their natural, developmentally predictable desire for acceptance. As discussed above, "Likes" activate the reward region of the brain and release dopamine to create a positive feedback loop.⁷¹⁵ Users return to TikTok again and again, hoping for yet another pleasurable experience.⁷¹⁶

636. ByteDance also designed TikTok to use reciprocity to manipulate users into using the app. One example is the "Duet" feature, which allows users to post a video side-by-side with a video from another TikTok user. Users utilize "Duet" to react to the videos of TikTok content creators. ByteDance intends the response to engender a reciprocal response from the creator of the original video, inducing them to return to the app.

637. Another "core feature" of TikTok that ByteDance has pursued are "challenges," which are campaigns that compel users to create and post in TikTok certain types of videos, such as performing a dance routine or a dangerous prank. By fostering competition and the social rewards of posting a challenge video, ByteDance incentivizes users to engage with the platform continuously.

638. Harmful and dangerous interactions are a foreseeable consequence of TikTok's engagement-maximization design. For example, numerous minor users have injured themselves

⁷¹⁵ Rasan Burhan & Jalal Moradzadeh, *Neurotransmitter Dopamine (DA) and its Role in the Development of Social Media Addiction*, 11(7) J. Neurology & Neurophysiology 507 (2020), <https://www.iomcworld.org/openaccess/neurotransmitter-dopamine-da-and-its-role-in-the-development-of-social-media-addiction.pdf>.

⁷¹⁶ Rasan Burhan & Jalal Moradzadeh, *Neurotransmitter Dopamine (DA) and its Role in the Development of Social Media Addiction*, 11(7) J. Neurology & Neurophysiology 507 (2020), <https://www.iomcworld.org/openaccess/neurotransmitter-dopamine-da-and-its-role-in-the-development-of-social-media-addiction.pdf>.

or others participating in viral pranks to obtain rewards and increase the number of likes, views, and followers.

639. One such viral prank, “the Benadryl challenge,” features a user filming themselves taking large quantities of Benadryl to cause hallucinations or induce an altered mental state. Other similar viral challenges include the “NyQuil Challenge,” in which young people are encouraged to eat chicken cooked in NyQuil; the “Milk Crate Challenge,” where adolescents climb atop a stack of milk crates and jump off; the “Penny Challenge,” where young users are encouraged to plug a charger halfway into an outlet while holding a penny against the exposed prongs; and the “Blackout Challenge” where youth are encouraged to make themselves faint by holding their breath and constricting their chest muscles or restricting airflow with a ligature around their neck.

640. TikTok challenges have led to serious health complications, seizures, and death, with at least 12 children in the United States dying from the TikTok Blackout Challenge alone.⁷¹⁷

641. As more users engage with a challenge video, the creator of the video is awarded increased “Likes,” views, and followers. TikTok’s reward features thus incentivize this dangerous behavior, resulting too often in physical harm or humiliation in the obsessive pursuit of social significance.⁷¹⁸

642. ByteDance encourages businesses to create challenges as a form of marketing, explaining that challenges are “geared towards building awareness and engagement,” and “research shows that they can deliver strong results” and increased return on ad spending “at every

⁷¹⁷ Quinn Nguyen, *Don’t let your kids try these 9 dangerous TikTok trends!* <https://cyberpurify.com/knowledge/9-dangerous-tiktok-trends/>; Olivia Carville, *TikTok’s Viral Challenges Keep Luring Young Kids to Their Deaths*, *Bloomberg* (Nov. 30, 2022) <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2022-11-30/is-tiktok-responsible-if-kids-die-doing-dangerous-viral-challenges>.

⁷¹⁸ See TIKTOK3047MDL-001-00000813 [REDACTED]

stage of the funnel.”⁷¹⁹ While ByteDance extolls the revenue potential from challenges, young users continue to face new and serious harms as the challenges’ stakes grow even more extreme and dangerous.

4. ByteDance’s dangerous features include impediments to discontinuing use.

643. Even if a user escapes the addictiveness of TikTok’s design and decides to delete their account, ByteDance makes doing so a lengthy and complex undertaking. The deletion process is dangerously designed to encourage users to retain their accounts, even if their stated reason for deletion is that the platform is endangering their safety or health.

644. When a user selects the “Deactivate or delete account” in the “Account” section of the TikTok app, the user is presented an option: “Delete or deactivate?” Deactivating an account will preserve the user’s data, but hide it from the platform; deleting, on the other hand, will permanently delete all data associated with the account.

645. However, ByteDance designed TikTok so that deletion is not immediate. The data and account are preserved for 30 days, during which time the user can reactivate their account.

646. If a user selects the “Delete account permanently” option, the user is asked “Why are you leaving TikTok?” The user must select from the following list: (1) I’m leaving temporarily; (2) I’m on TikTok too much; (3) Safety or privacy concerns; (4) Too many irrelevant ads; (5) Trouble getting started; (6) I have multiple accounts; or (7) Another reason.

647. If a user selects “I’m on TikTok too much,” ByteDance makes a last-ditch effort to retain the user by reminding the user that a limit can be set on the user’s watch time on the platform. If a user selects “Safety or privacy concerns,” the user is provided a list of resources to “secure” the account. If the user selects “Another reason,” a written explanation must be provided. The only

⁷¹⁹ *Branded Hashtag Challenge: Harness the Power of Participation*, TikTok for Business (Mar. 16, 2022), <https://www.tiktok.com/business/en-US/blog/branded-hashtag-challenge-harness-the-power-of-participation>.

option that does not provide or require further information is “I have multiple accounts.” ByteDance isn’t worried about users deleting merely one account if they already have multiple others.

648. Once a user selects a reason for deletion, the next screen prompts the user to download their TikTok data.

649. Before the user continues the deletion, the platform requires the user to check a box at the bottom of the screen that says, “[b]y continuing, you reviewed your data request and wish to continue deleting your account.” This contrasts with the process of a user “agreeing” to the Terms of Service and Privacy Policy during the registration process, which does not require a separate confirmation.

650. Once the user confirms a desire to continue with the deletion process, the platform takes the user to yet another screen, which yet again asks whether the user wants to “delete this account?” The text also explains that the account will be deactivated for 30 days, during which the user may reactivate the account, and after 30 days, the account and data associated with it will be permanently deleted. It goes on to warn that if a user deletes the account, the user will no longer be able to do many things in the app.

651. Once a user again confirms that they want to delete their account, TikTok requires validation with a 6-digit code sent to the telephone number or email address associated with the account. Only after the user receives and enters the code may they finally “delete” their account (after waiting 30 days).

652. ByteDance’s account deletion process is inadequate for children attempting to escape its addictive and harmful platform. Requiring a child to go through multiple steps, and offering alternatives, as well as a list of things they are giving up, is designed to convince them to

change their mind. Moreover, requiring the user to maintain a deactivated account for 30 days, rather than deleting it on demand, increases the chance that an addicted user will relapse and return to the app.

653. ByteDance’s intentionally cumbersome and dangerous deletion process prioritizes the retention of young users, and ad revenue that they generate, over their well-being.

5. ByteDance’s dangerous features inflict impossible image standards and encourage negative appearance comparison.

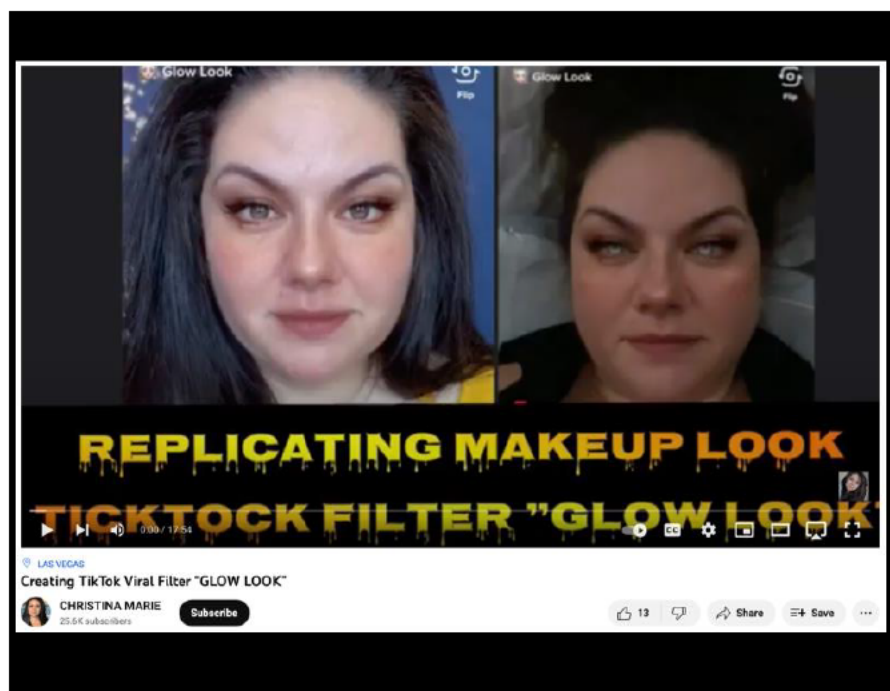
654. ByteDance designed TikTok with image-altering filters that harm users. These filters allow children to artificially change their appearance, for example by lightening their skin and eyes, giving them glowing tan skin, or giving them larger lips or fluttering eyelashes.

655. Young people often then compare the filtered images to their real-life appearance, developing a negative self-image based on unrealistic, artificial images.⁷²⁰ Many young girls use image-altering filters every day, harming their mental health. And those filters subconsciously make girls feel imperfect and ugly, “reduc[ing] their self-compassion and tolerance for their own physical flaws.”⁷²¹

656. So compelling is the desire to resemble more closely the filtered ideal that there are online tutorials explaining how to recreate certain filters using makeup.

⁷²⁰ Anna Haines, *From ‘Instagram Face’ To ‘Snapchat Dysmorphia’: How Beauty Filters Are Changing The Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021 at 1:19 PM EDT), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c32eb144eff>.

⁷²¹ Anna Haines, *From ‘Instagram Face’ To ‘Snapchat Dysmorphia’: How Beauty Filters Are Changing The Way We See Ourselves*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2021 at 1:19 PM EDT), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/annahaines/2021/04/27/from-instagram-face-to-snapchat-dysmorphia-how-beauty-filters-are-changing-the-way-we-see-ourselves/?sh=3c32eb144eff>.



657. Children’s idealization of their filtered image is externally reinforced when the filtered images receive more likes, comments, and other interaction. Young people also compare these interaction “scores” to those of friends and celebrities who use filters, reinforcing the idea that beauty depends on matching a digital ideal.

658. But filters, retouch, and other editing tools available on TikTok often alter specific facial features, such as the shape of a person’s eyes and lips, in ways that would require medical intervention to alter in real life. Children, particularly girls, are thus striving for a standard of beauty that is functionally impossible to achieve, with every TikTok filter creating a test that they are doomed to fail.

D. ByteDance facilitates the spread of CSAM and child exploitation.

659. ByteDance has designed various TikTok features that promote and dramatically exacerbate sexual exploitation, the spread of CSAM, sextortion, and other socially maladaptive behavior that harms children.

660. TikTok’s design features enable the spread of this illegal material, and it receives value in the form of increased user activity for disseminating these materials on the platform.

661. TikTok allows users to add a location to publicly shared videos of themselves.⁷²² TikTok encourages the use of location services, “prompt[ing] [users] to turn on Location Services when [users] browse the For You feed.”

662. By providing access to a child user’s present physical location, ByteDance encourages predators to locate nearby children for purposes of sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM.

663. ByteDance designed TikTok with a “Your Private Videos,” feature, where users can create and store private videos that are only visible to the user, better known as “Post-in-Private” accounts, where adult predators store, create, post, and share CSAM. Within days of following a small number of “Post-in-Private” accounts, TikTok’s algorithm begins recommending dozens of other “Post-in-Private” accounts to follow, making it easy for predators to view and share even more CSAM.⁷²³

664. These accounts are nominally private, but users can share their usernames and passwords with other users to access these private videos.⁷²⁴ While ByteDance’s user policy forbids sharing passwords with other users, TikTok’s design means that it is nonetheless very easy to do.⁷²⁵

⁷²² *Location Information on TikTok*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/account-and-privacy/account-privacy-settings/location-services-on-tiktok>.

⁷²³ *Location Information on TikTok*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/account-and-privacy/account-privacy-settings/location-services-on-tiktok>.

⁷²⁴ Gracelynn Wan, *These TikTok Accounts Are Hiding Child Sexual Abuse Material In Plain Sight*, Forbes (Nov. 14, 2022) <https://www.forbes.com/sites/alexandralevine/2022/11/11/tiktok-private-csam-child-sexual-abuse-material/?sh=749d6cb63ad9>.

⁷²⁵ TikTok Terms of Service, <https://www.tiktok.com/legal/page/us/terms-of-service/en>.

665. ByteDance designed TikTok to offer two-factor authentication but does not require users to enable it. In fact, when a user creates a new account, the default setting disables the two-factor authentication.⁷²⁶

666. Furthermore, TikTok allows more than one device to be simultaneously logged into a single account, allowing multiple predators to use one “Post-in-Private” account simultaneously.

667. ByteDance’s “Post-in-Private” accounts feature also facilitate the grooming of children and adolescents by adult predators. Adult predators can store CSAM videos in “Your Private Videos” and then show them to adolescent users as a grooming tool. Should adult predators convince adolescent users to create CSAM of themselves in the “Post-in-Private” accounts, the “Your Private Videos” feature makes it easy for the videos to be produced, uploaded, and stored.

668. Another dangerous feature of TikTok is its livestream platform, “TikTok LIVE.” Although ByteDance’s policy restricts access for anyone under eighteen to “TikTok LIVE,” TikTok’s design, as discussed above, does not incorporate an age verification protocol, so it is easy for underage users to access this feature.⁷²⁷

669. Within “TikTok LIVE” is another feature called “LIVE Gifts” for “viewers to react and show their appreciation for [] LIVE content in real-time.”⁷²⁸ TikTok then awards “Diamonds” to LIVE creators based on the popularity of their content. “One way for creators to collect “Diamonds is to receive Gifts from viewers on [their] LIVE videos.” Creators awarded “Diamonds” “may obtain a Reward Payment in money or in virtual items.”⁷²⁹

⁷²⁶ *How your email and phone number are used on TikTok*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/account-and-privacy/personalized-ads-and-data/how-your-phone-number-is-used-on-tiktok>.

⁷²⁷ *What is TikTok LIVE?*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/live-gifts-wallet/tiktok-live/what-is-tiktok-live>.

⁷²⁸ *LIVE Gifts on TikTok*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/live-gifts-wallet/tiktok-live/live-gifts-on-tiktok>.

⁷²⁹ *LIVE Gifts on TikTok*, TikTok, <https://support.tiktok.com/en/live-gifts-wallet/tiktok-live/live-gifts-on-tiktok>.

670. ByteDance’s design of the “LIVE Gifts” and “Diamonds” rewards greatly increases the risk of adult predators targeting adolescent users for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM. According to Leah Plunket, an assistant dean at Harvard Law School, “TikTok LIVE” is “the digital equivalent of going down the street to a strip club filled with 15-year-olds.”⁷³⁰ “Livestreams on [TikTok] are a popular place for men to lurk and for young girls—enticed by money and gifts—to perform sexually suggestive acts.”⁷³¹

671. Another of TikTok’s dangerous features enables predators to communicate privately with youth, with virtually no evidence of what was exchanged. The private messaging or “Direct messaging” feature allows a user to send a direct private message to another user. Predators use these messages to identify children willing to respond to a stranger’s message and then prey on the child’s vulnerabilities.

672. Although TikTok’s features enable predators, TikTok does not have any feature to allow users to specifically report CSAM.⁷³²

673. Federal law mandates that ByteDance reports suspected CSAM to NCEMC under 18 U.S.C. § 2258A. To limit and avoid its reporting requirements under federal law, ByteDance purposely designed its platforms—which it knows are used by children, including children under 13—not to incorporate modern CSAM detection technology. This technology would be free for ByteDance to implement within its platform design.

⁷³⁰ Alexandra Levine, *How TikTok Live Became a Strip Club Filled with 15 Year Olds*, Forbes (Apr. 27, 2022), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/alexandralevine/2022/04/27/how-tiktok-live-became-a-strip-club-filled-with-15-year-olds/?sh=5d6cf08d62d7>.

⁷³¹ Alexandra S. Levine, *How TikTok LIVE Became ‘A Strip Club Filled with 15-Year Olds,’* Forbes, <https://www.forbes.com/sites/alexandralevine/2022/04/27/how-tiktok-live-became-a-strip-club-filled-with-15-year-olds/?sh=64c0447362d7>.

⁷³² Canadian Centre for Child Protection, *Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms*, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf.

674. Furthermore, in violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2258A, ByteDance knowingly fails to report massive amounts of material in violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2256 and 18 U.S.C. § 1466A.

675. ByteDance knowingly fails to take feasible, adequate, and readily available measures to remove these contraband materials from its platform in a timely fashion.

676. ByteDance made approximately 596 reports to NCMEC in 2019 and 22,692 reports in 2020.⁷³³ However, ByteDance failed to report materials violating the reporting requirements of 18 U.S.C. § 2258A in 2019.

677. Users have reported “Post-in-Private” CSAM videos to TikTok, and ByteDance responded that no violations of its policy were found. One user searched for and contacted multiple TikTok employees to sound the alarm that CSAM was being created and shared within TikTok’s “Post-in-Private” accounts. This user did not receive a single response to her concerns.⁷³⁴

678. ByteDance nonetheless continues to make false representations that they will “take immediate action to remove content, terminate accounts, and report cases to NCMEC and law enforcement as appropriate.”⁷³⁵

679. ByteDance gains revenue for every daily user on TikTok in North America. Each user and their data are worth income, and ByteDance continues to benefit financially from predators who commit sexual abuse against children and/or share CSAM using ByteDance’s platform.

E. ByteDance failed to adequately warn the public about the harms its platform causes or to provide instructions regarding safe use.

⁷³³ Community guidelines enforcement report, TikTok (2022), <https://www.tiktok.com/transparency/en-us/community-guidelines-enforcement-2020-2/>.

⁷³⁴ Gracelynn Wan, *These TikTok Accounts Are Hiding Child Sexual Abuse Material In Plain Sight*, Forbes (Nov. 14, 2022), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/alexandralevine/2022/11/11/tiktok-private-csam-child-sexual-abuse-material/?sh=290dbfa63ad9>

⁷³⁵ *Protecting Against Exploitative Content*, TikTok, <https://newsroom.tiktok.com/en-us/protecting-against-exploitative-content>.

680. Since TikTok's inception, ByteDance has failed to adequately warn young users about the physical and mental health risks its platform poses. These risks include, but are not limited to, platform abuse and addiction, sexual exploitation from adult users, dissociative behavior, damage to body image, social isolation, and a plethora of mental health disorders like body dysmorphia, eating disorders, anxiety, depression, insomnia, ADD/ADHD exacerbation, suicidal ideation, self-harm, suicide, and death.

681. ByteDance targets young users via advertising and marketing materials distributed throughout traditional as well as digital media, including other social media platforms. ByteDance fails to provide adequate warnings in advertising and marketing campaigns to potential adolescent consumers of the physical and mental harms associated with using TikTok.

682. ByteDance heavily advertises its platform on YouTube and Snapchat, where it knows it can effectively reach younger users. In 2019, for example, 80 percent of TikTok's advertising spending was on Snapchat.⁷³⁶

683. One TikTok ad compiles viral videos featuring people of all ages and sets the video to the pandemic musical hit "Bored in the House," by a popular TikTok creator. The 15-second video, titled "It Starts On TikTok," notes, "if it's in culture, it starts on TikTok."⁷³⁷ Zhu highlighted the importance of the U.S. teen market to TikTok, admitting that in China, "teenage culture doesn't exist" because "teens are super busy in school studying for tests, so they don't have the time and luxury to play social media apps." On the other hand, teen culture in the United States is "a golden audience."⁷³⁸

⁷³⁶ *TikTok – Snapchat's Biggest Advertiser – What's the Strategy*, Media Radar (Feb. 24, 2020), <https://mediaradar.com/blog/tiktok-snapchat-advertising-strategy/>.

⁷³⁷ *TikTok, It Starts on TikTok: Bored in the House*, YouTube (Sept. 9, 2020), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DWZCgkmcIjE>.

⁷³⁸ Paul Mozur, *Chinese Tech Firms Forced to Choose Market: Home or Everywhere Else*, N.Y. Times (Aug. 9, 2016), <https://www.nytimes.com/2016/08/10/technology/china-homegrown-internet-companies-rest-of-the-world.html>.

684. Other advertisements ByteDance places on YouTube promote TikTok as a family-friendly platform. For example, one commercial features parents impersonating their children, explaining that “parents roasting their kids is the best kind of family bonding.”⁷³⁹ Another TikTok ad asks content creators what TikTok means to them. Responses include “family,” “sharing special moments with my daughter,” and a featured appearance by well-known TikTok creator Addison Rae, who says TikTok represents “family and fun.”⁷⁴⁰

685. ByteDance released another TikTok ad, part of the “It Starts on TikTok” ad campaign, and scheduled it to release on the linear TV, digital media, digital out-of-home, radio and TikTok’s own social channels.⁷⁴¹ The tagline for the campaign was “[l]oving all of you and the things you do. Celebrating you” and featured a series of viral clips of various cheerful scenes depicting people gathered with friends and family of ages.

686. ByteDance is also one of the biggest advertisers on Snapchat. In 2019, ByteDance accounted for 4.4% of Snapchat’s advertising revenue.⁷⁴² ByteDance knows that advertising on Snapchat is an effective way to reach a young audience. Snap claims that its Snapchat platform reaches 90% of people aged 13-24 years old, and 75% of 13-34 year olds in the United States.

687. Despite its funny, cheerful ads featuring smiling families and funny images, TikTok, as designed, presents serious risks to young users on the platform, through its distinctive and manipulative platform features, including a lack of adequate age and identity verification tools, as well as inadequate parental controls.

⁷³⁹ *Family Impressions, Compilation*, TikTok’s Official YouTube Page, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6EYzm25gW-s>.

⁷⁴⁰ *TikTok Creators Share Their Thoughts About TikTok*, TikTok’s Official YouTube Page <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KAyEGBv7HVM>.

⁷⁴¹ Todd Spangler, *TikTok Launches Biggest-Ever Ad Campaign as Its Fate Remains Cloudy*, Variety (Aug. 10, 2020), <https://variety.com/2020/digital/news/tiktok-advertising-brand-campaign-sale-bytedance-1234738607/>.

⁷⁴² Robert Williams, *TikTok is the biggest advertiser on Snapchat, study says*, MarketingDive (March 16, 2020), <https://www.marketingdive.com/news/tiktok-is-the-biggest-advertiser-on-snapchat-study-says/574164/>.

688. ByteDance fails to adequately warn young users of these risks beginning with the first stages of the platform registration process. At account setup, TikTok contains no warning labels, banners, or conspicuous messaging to adequately inform adolescent users of platform risks, potential dangers, and physical and mental harm associated with usage of the platform. Instead, ByteDance allows underage users to easily create an account (or multiple accounts) and fully access the platform.

689. ByteDance's lack of appropriate warnings continues once a child has TikTok. ByteDance does not suitably inform child users that their data will be tracked, used to help build a unique algorithmic profile, and potentially sold to TikTok's advertising clients.

690. Alarming, ByteDance also does not adequately warn young users before facilitating adult connections and interactions that adult predators use its platform.

691. ByteDance's failure to adequately warn young users about the risks of the platform continues even if they display signs of addiction or habitual and compulsive use. Besides the disabled by default "Take a Break" reminder, ByteDance does not warn users when their screen time reaches harmful levels or when young users are accessing the platform on a habitual basis.

692. Not only does ByteDance fail to adequately warn users about the risks associated with TikTok, but it also does not provide sufficient instructions on how children can safely use the platform. A reasonable and responsible company would instruct children on best practices and safety protocols when using a platform known to contain danger and health risks.

693. ByteDance, however, fails to adequately warn users that:

- a. sexual predators use its platform to produce and distribute CSAM;
- b. adult predators targeting children for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM are prevalent on ByteDance's platform;

- c. usage of its platform can increase the risk of children being targeted and sexually exploited by adult predators;
- d. usage of its platform can increase risky and uninhibited behavior in children, making them easier targets to adult predators for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM; and,
- e. end-to-end encryption and/or the ephemeral nature of ByteDance's direct messaging platform prevents the reporting of CSAM.

694. ByteDance failed to adequately warn parents about all of the foregoing dangers and harms. ByteDance's failure to adequately warn and instruct has proximately caused significant harm to adolescent users' mental and physical well-being.

VI. FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS AS TO GOOGLE

695. Eric Schmidt, the former CEO of Google and more recently, Alphabet, YouTube's corporate parent, recently acknowledged the powerful, and purposeful, addictive effect of social media. Social media platforms are about "maximizing revenue," Mr. Schmidt said, and the best way to maximize revenue is to "maximize engagement." As Mr. Schmidt continued, in pursuit of their goal of maximizing engagement to increase revenues, social media platforms "play into the addiction capabilities of every human."⁷⁴³

696. Google's YouTube platform is no exception. It includes specific, carefully calibrated features that are known to exploit the mental processes of its users to keep them engaged for as long, as frequently, and as intensely as possible. Google knows that children and teenagers who flock in droves to its YouTube platform are particularly susceptible to these features. The impact of YouTube's addictive power on American youth has been devastating.

A. Background and overview of YouTube.

⁷⁴³ Issie Lapowsky, *Eric Schmidt: Social Media Companies 'Maximize Outrage' for Revenue*, Protocol (Jan. 6, 2022), <https://www.protocol.com/bulletins/eric-schmidt-youtube-criticism>.

697. YouTube is a social media platform that allows users to post and consume countless hours of video content about virtually any topic imaginable. YouTube is available without any age verification feature or adequate parental controls, and comes pre-installed in many Smart-TVs, mobile devices, various digital media players like Roku, and video game consoles like PlayStation, Wii, X-box and Nintendo.

698. YouTube allows users to search for specific video content. It also employs a powerful algorithm that exploits detailed user information to target each individual user with hours upon hours of videos recommended by YouTube.

699. A group of design experts and computer scientists created YouTube and launched the platform for public use in December 2005.

700. Technology behemoth Google quickly recognized YouTube's huge profit potential. In 2006, just a year after YouTube's launch, Google acquired YouTube for more than \$1.65 billion in Google stock. At the time, Google's acquisition of YouTube was one of the largest-ever tech acquisitions.

701. YouTube primarily generates revenue by selling advertising. The more people who use YouTube and spend time on the site, the more ads YouTube can sell.⁷⁴⁴ The ads are then embedded or placed within the endless stream of videos recommended to the user by YouTube's algorithm.

702. By 2012, YouTube users were watching close to four billion hours of video every month. Yet, the average YouTube user spent just fifteen minutes daily engaged with the

⁷⁴⁴ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

platform.⁷⁴⁵ Users “were coming to YouTube when they knew what they were coming to look for.”⁷⁴⁶ They employed the platform to identify and watch certain video content, and then they were done.

703. To drive greater revenue, “YouTube . . . set a company-wide objective to reach one billion hours of viewing a day[.]”⁷⁴⁷

704. As Susan Wojcicki, YouTube’s CEO explained, the goal of a “billion hours of daily watch time gave our tech people a North Star.”⁷⁴⁸

705. Google decided that “the best way to keep eyes on the site” was to introduce a feature that would “[recommend] videos, [that were playing] or after one was finished.”⁷⁴⁹

706. That new platform feature uses a recommendation algorithm to identify and push additional videos to users, which YouTube plays automatically, through a feature called “autoplay.” Autoplay begins the next video as soon as the previous videos ends, creating a constant stream of content.

707. Google’s design changes worked. Today, YouTube “has over 2 billion monthly logged-in users.”⁷⁵⁰ And that 2 billion figure does not capture all platform usage because YouTube, by design, allows users to consume videos without logging in or registering an account.

⁷⁴⁵ John Seabrook, *Streaming Dreams: YouTube Turns Pro*, New Yorker (Jan. 16, 2012), <https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/01/16/streaming-dreams>.

⁷⁴⁶ Casey Newton, *How YouTube Perfected the Feed*, Verge (Aug. 30, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/8/30/16222850/youtube-google-brain-algorithm-video-recommendation-personalized-feed>.

⁷⁴⁷ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁷⁴⁸ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁷⁴⁹ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁷⁵⁰ *YouTube for Press*, YouTube, <https://blog.youtube/press/>.

B. Google intentionally encourages youth to use YouTube and then leverages that use to increase revenue.

708. Google knows that children and teenagers use YouTube in greater proportions than older demographics. YouTube now ranks as the world’s most popular social media platform for minors. According to one recent report, more than 95% of children ages 13-17 have used YouTube.⁷⁵¹ Nearly 20% of U.S. teens use YouTube almost constantly.⁷⁵² Among U.S. teenagers who regularly use social media, 32% “wouldn’t want to live without” YouTube.⁷⁵³

709. Rather than ensuring minors are not inappropriately or excessively using YouTube, Google has sought to dominate their attention.

710. YouTube’s age controls are dangerous (or non-existent, since registration is not required). In addition, Google has developed and marketed a version of YouTube, YouTube Kids, explicitly targeted at children under 13. Google developed this platform to encourage early—and therefore lasting—adoption of YouTube by children.

711. Google knows that a robust and committed base of young users is key to maximizing advertising revenue. Indeed, it has aggressively touted its hold on child users to advertisers.

712. In 2014, for example, Google pitched its YouTube platform to Hasbro, a popular toy manufacturer, and specifically boasted of the platform’s immense popularity among children,

⁷⁵¹ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022>.

⁷⁵² Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022>.

⁷⁵³ Victoria Rideout et al., *Common Sense Census: Media Use by Tweens and Teens, 2021* at 31, Common Sense Media (2022), https://www.commonsensemedia.org/sites/default/files/research/report/8-18-census-integrated-report-final-web_0.pdf.

noting that it was “unanimously voted as the favorite website of kids 2-12” and that “93% of tweens” use the platform.⁷⁵⁴

713. In 2015, Google gave a similar presentation to toy manufacturer Mattel, the maker of Barbie and other popular kids’ toys, highlighting children’s widespread use of YouTube to persuade Mattel to display digital ads on the site.⁷⁵⁵

714. The FTC has aptly summarized Google’s pitch to advertisers concerning the value of its youth user base.⁷⁵⁶ For example, Google boasted that YouTube “is today’s leader in reaching children age 6-11;” “the new ‘Saturday Morning Cartoons’;” “unanimously voted as the favorite website of kids 2-12;” “the #1 website regularly visited by kids;” and used by “93% of tweens.”⁷⁵⁷

715. Many of YouTube’s most-viewed videos are kid-focused, and the most subscribed and highest paid YouTubers are children. With over 12 billion views, “Baby Shark Dance,” a video aimed at toddlers, is the most viewed video in the history of YouTube— and it and five other child-focused videos make up the top ten YouTube videos of all time.⁷⁵⁸ Child creators also dominate top-earner lists year after year. Ryan Kaji of Ryan’s World (f/k/a Ryan ToysReview), a channel featuring now 12-year-old Ryan Kaji unboxing children’s toys, has been among YouTube’s Top

⁷⁵⁴ Complaint for Permanent Injunction, Civil Penalties, and Other Equitable Relief, *FTC v. Google LLC et al.*, No. 1-19-cv-02642-BAH, Doc. 1-1 at 6 (D.D.C. Sept. 4, 2019).

https://www.ftc.gov/system/files/documents/cases/youtube_complaint_exhibits.pdf.

⁷⁵⁵ Complaint for Permanent Injunction, Civil Penalties, and Other Equitable Relief, *FTC v. Google LLC et al.*, No. 1-19-cv-02642-BAH, Doc. 1-1 at 3 (D.D.C. Sept. 4, 2019).

https://www.ftc.gov/system/files/documents/cases/youtube_complaint_exhibits.pdf.

⁷⁵⁶ *Google and YouTube Will Pay Record \$170 Million for Alleged Violations of Children’s Privacy Law*, FTC (Sept. 4, 2019), <https://www.ftc.gov/news-events/news/press-releases/2019/09/google-youtube-will-pay-record-170-million-alleged-violations-childrens-privacy-law>. (“YouTube touted its popularity with children to prospective corporate clients”, said FTC Chairman Joe Simons.)

⁷⁵⁷ Complaint for Permanent Injunction, Civil Penalties, and Other Equitable Relief, *FTC v. Google LLC et al.*, No. 1-19-cv-02642-BAH, Doc. 1-1 at 3, 6-7, 12 (D.D.C. Sept. 4, 2019).

https://www.ftc.gov/system/files/documents/cases/youtube_complaint_exhibits.pdf.

⁷⁵⁸ Most Viewed Videos of All Time • (Over 700M views) - YouTube.

https://www.youtube.com/playlist?list=PLirAqAtl_h2r5g8xGajEwdXd3x1sZh8hC

10 most-subscribed channels in the United States since 2016.⁷⁵⁹ Ryan started Ryan’s World in 2015 when he was only 3. By 2017, his videos had over 8 billion views, and by 2018, he was the highest-earning YouTuber in the world.⁷⁶⁰

716. As with other defendants, once Google lures children in, it then mines them (and all other users) for a breathtaking amount of data. Google’s current privacy policy, which includes the YouTube platform’s data collection, reveals how sweeping this data collection is. It states that Google tracks:

- a. “information about the apps, browsers, and devices you use to access Google services . . . include[ing] unique identifiers, browser type and settings, device type and settings, operating system, mobile network information including carrier name and phone number, and application version number. We also collect information about the interaction of your apps, browsers, and devices with our services, including IP address, crash reports, system activity, and the date, time, and referrer URL of your request.”
- b. “your activity in our services . . . includ[ing] terms you search for[;] videos you watch[;] views and interactions with content and ads[;] voice and audio information[;] purchase activity[;] people with whom you communicate or share content[;] activity on third-party sites and apps that use our services[;] and Chrome browsing history you’ve synced with your Google Account.”
- c. “Your location information [including] GPS and other sensor data from your device[;] IP address[;] activity on Google services, such as your searches and places you label like home or work[;] [and] information about things near

⁷⁵⁹ Madeline Berg, *The Highest-Paid YouTube Stars of 2019: The Kids Are Killing It*, Forbes (Dec. 18, 2019), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/maddieberg/2019/12/18/the-highest-paid-youtube-stars-of-2019-the-kids-are-killing-it/?sh=4c3df9a438cd>; Madeline Berg, *The Highest-Paid YouTube Stars 2017: Gamer DanTDM Takes The Crown With \$16.5 Million*, Forbes (Dec. 7, 2017), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/maddieberg/2017/12/07/the-highest-paid-youtube-stars-2017-gamer-dantdm-takes-the-crown-with-16-5-million/?sh=72de79413979>

⁷⁶⁰ *Gamer DanTDM Takes The Crown With \$16.5 Million*, Forbes (Dec. 7, 2017), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/maddieberg/2017/12/07/the-highest-paid-youtube-stars-2017-gamer-dantdm-takes-the-crown-with-16-5-million/?sh=72de79413979>; Natalie Robehmed & Madeline Berg, *Highest-Paid YouTube Stars 2018: Markiplier, Jake Paul, PewDiePie And More*, Forbes (Dec. 3, 2018), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/natalierobehmed/2018/12/03/highest-paid-youtube-stars-2018-markiplier-jake-paul-pewdiepie-and-more/?sh=7d909c3f909a>.

your device, such as Wi-Fi access points, cell towers, and Bluetooth-enabled devices;”⁷⁶¹

717. Google’s privacy policy also indicates that, like other Defendants, it purchases data about its users from data brokers, which it euphemistically refers to as “trusted partners” or “marketing partners.”⁷⁶²

718. As with other Defendants, YouTube’s collection and analysis of user data allows it to assemble virtual dossiers on its users, covering hundreds if not thousands of user-specific data segments. This, in turn, allows advertisers to micro-target marketing and advertising dollars to very specific categories of users, who can be segregated into pools or lists using YouTube’s data segments. Advertisers purchase ad real estate space on users’ feeds, which allow them to place the right ads in front of these micro-targeted segments of users--including children, both in the main YouTube frame and in the YouTube Kids platform. Only a fraction of these data segments come from content knowingly designated by users for publication or explicitly provided by users in their account profiles. Instead, many of these data segments are collected by YouTube through surveillance of each user’s activity while using the platform and even when logged off the platform.⁷⁶³

719. As with Meta, Google’s data policy does not inform users that the more time individuals spend using YouTube, the more ads Google can deliver and the more money it can make, or that the more time users spend on YouTube, the more YouTube learns about them, and the more it can sell to advertisers the ability to micro-target highly personalized ads.

⁷⁶¹ Information Google Collects. <https://policies.google.com/privacy?hl=en#infocollect>.

⁷⁶² Information Google Collects. <https://policies.google.com/privacy?hl=en#infocollect>.

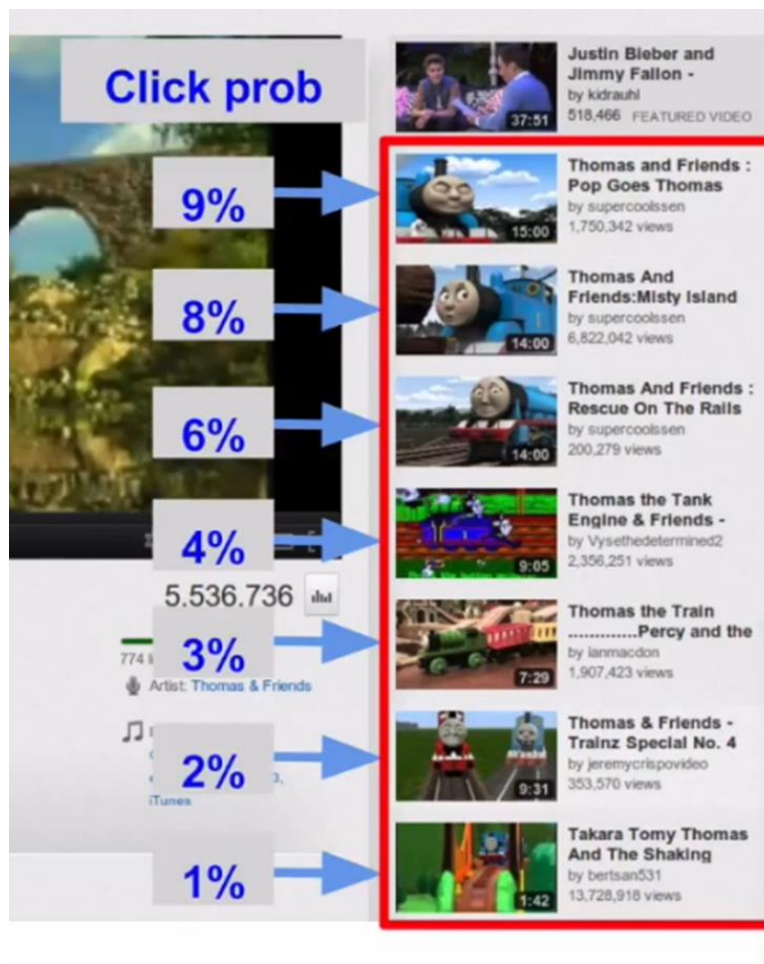
⁷⁶³ About Targeting for Video Campaigns, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2454017?hl=en>.

720. Google's secret virtual dossiers on its users, including child users, fuel its algorithms. The company relies on this data—including data plainly reflecting use by children—to train its algorithms. A Google engineer explained in a 2014 presentation:

What do I mean by a training example? It's a single-user experience. On YouTube, perhaps it's that one [Thomas the Tank Engine] webpage my son saw six months ago, along with all the recommendations that we showed him. We also record the outcome to know whether the recommendations we made are good or whether they're bad. That's a single training exercise. On a large property, you can easily get into hundreds of billions of these.⁷⁶⁴

The engineer illustrated this with a slide, excerpted below, presenting how algorithmic analysis both structured the format of recommendations of Thomas the Tank Engine YouTube videos and provided information to inform algorithmic training through user engagement:

⁷⁶⁴ Alex Woodie, *Inside Sibyl, Google's Massively Parallel Machine Learning Platform*, Datanami (Jul. 17, 2014) <https://www.datanami.com/2014/07/17/inside-sibyl-googles-massively-parallel-machine-learning-platform/>.



721. Through these and other efforts, YouTube has delivered massive amounts of advertising revenue to Google. In 2021 alone, YouTube generated about \$29 billion in revenue selling ads on its site.⁷⁶⁵

C. Google intentionally designed platform features to addict children and adolescents.

722. Google devised and continues to employ interrelated platform features to increase usage and maximize engagement by teenagers and children. Simply put, YouTube's platform

⁷⁶⁵ Andrew Hutchinson, *YouTube Generated \$28.8 Billion in Ad Revenue in 2021*, Social Media Today (Feb. 2, 2021), <https://www.socialmediatoday.com/news/youtube-generated-288-billion-in-ad-revenue-in-2021-fueling-the-creator/618208/>; Jennifer Elias, *YouTube Is a Media Juggernaut That Could Soon Equal Netflix in Revenue*, CNBC (Apr. 27, 2021), <https://www.cnbc.com/2021/04/27/youtube-could-soon-equal-netflix-in-revenue.html>.

features are engineered to induce excessive use and to addict adolescents and children to the platform.

1. Google's age-verification measures and parental controls are dangerous.

723. Google's strategy to entrench minor users begins with access. The company purports to impose a minimum age requirement and claims to verify the age of its users. But those features are dangerous, as they do little to prevent children and teenagers from using the platform.

724. Anyone with access to the Internet, regardless of age, can use YouTube and access every video available through the platform without registering an account or verifying their age. YouTube does not even ask for age information before allowing users to consume YouTube videos.

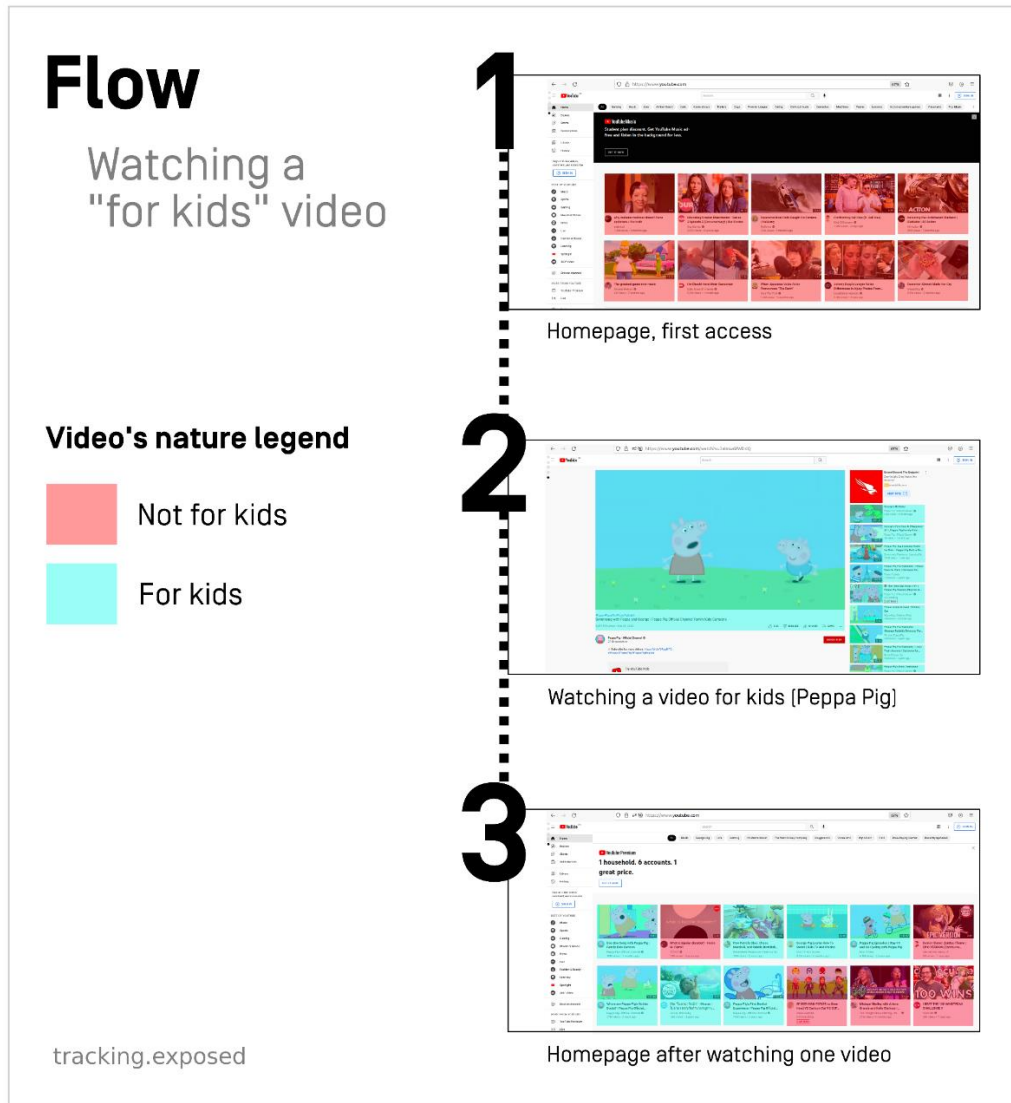
725. A user needs an account to post content or like (or comment) on videos. But to get one, a user needs only enter a valid email address and a birthday. Google does nothing to verify the birthday entered by users in the U.S.—and the platform freely permits users to change their birthdays in their account settings after creating an account.

726. YouTube's dangerous age verification feature means that Google fails to protect children from other platform features discussed below that Google knows to be harmful to kids.

727. For example, for users 13-17, Google claims to disable YouTube's autoplay feature. However, that measure is virtually meaningless because children can use YouTube without logging into any account or by logging in but misreporting their age.

728. Even if children use YouTube Kids, that platform contains many of the same defects YouTube does, including a harmful, manipulative algorithm, as alleged below.

729. Google cannot credibly claim that it is unaware of the fact and extent of youth usage of YouTube. Google's system can "identify children as being much younger than 13."⁷⁶⁶ According to Tracking Exposed, YouTube can rapidly identify a user as a child.⁷⁶⁷



730. Google engineers have publicly admitted YouTube's algorithm tracks user age. As Google engineers outlined in a 2016 paper on YouTube's recommendation system,

⁷⁶⁶ Tracking Exposed, Report: Non-Logged-In Children Using YouTube at 6 (Apr. 2022), <https://tracking.exposed/pdf/youtube-non-logged-kids-03July2022.pdf>.

⁷⁶⁷ Tracking Exposed, Report: Non-Logged-In Children Using YouTube at 15, 18 (Apr. 2022), <https://tracking.exposed/pdf/youtube-non-logged-kids-03July2022.pdf>.

“[d]emographic features are important for providing priors so that the recommendations behave reasonably for new users. The user’s geographic region and device are embedded and concatenated. Simple binary and continuous features such as the user’s gender, logged-in state and age are input directly into the network as real values normalized to [0; 1].”⁷⁶⁸

731. The Tracking Exposed Report indicated that there was “strong evidence” that Google’s systems continue to refine and develop a more precise estimate for under 18 users, but the platform does not “redirect them to YouTube Kids.”⁷⁶⁹

2. YouTube is dangerously designed to inundate users with features that use intermittent variable rewards and reciprocity.

732. Google uses a series of interrelated design features that exploit known mental processes to induce YouTube’s users to use the platform more frequently, for more extended periods, and with more intensity (i.e., providing more comments and likes). Google knows children and adolescents, whose brains are still developing, are particularly susceptible to these addictive features.

733. Google designed its platform so that when children and teenagers use it, they are inundated with interface design features specifically designed to dominate their attention and encourage excessive use. Every aspect of how YouTube presents the format of a given page with a video is structured to ensure unimpeded viewing of the videos, alongside download, like, and share buttons, plus recommendations for more videos to watch. The organization of these features is carefully calibrated to adjust to the space constraints of a user’s device, such that minimal effort is needed to watch a video unimpeded. YouTube even has an ambient mode that uses dynamic

⁷⁶⁸ Paul Covington et al., *Deep Neural Networks for YouTube Recommendations*, Google (2016), <https://storage.googleapis.com/pub-tools-public-publication-data/pdf/45530.pdf>.

⁷⁶⁹ Tracking Exposed, Report: Non-Logged-In Children Using YouTube at 6, 19 (Apr. 2022), <https://tracking.exposed/pdf/youtube-non-logged-kids-03July2022.pdf>.

color sampling so that the YouTube platform adapts to the video being watched and the user is not distracted by the video's borders.⁷⁷⁰

734. Like the other Defendants, Google has designed YouTube with features that exploit neuropsychology to maximize the time users (including children) spend using the platform.

735. IVR features, such as notifications and likes, compel YouTube content creators and consumers, particularly children, to use the platform habitually and excessively. For example, in order to create and upload content to YouTube, a user under 13 may submit a fictitious birthdate in order to gain access to posting privileges. Once the young user has a logged-in account, they are capable of receiving notifications and likes. For example, the logged in user can subscribe to various YouTube channels, which in turn will send them notifications from various channels they follow. Similarly, young content creators who upload videos to YouTube are able to track the likes received by the video. These features psychologically reward creators who upload videos to YouTube. As explained above, receiving a "Like" shows others' approval and activates the brain's reward region.⁷⁷¹ Thus, users' ability to like content encourages creators to use the platform compulsively, seeking additional pleasurable experiences.

736. Another YouTube defect is the design Google engineers deploy to induce "flow" state among users, which as described above is dangerous to children because it induces excessive use and poses a risk of addiction, compulsive use, and sleep deprivation.

737. YouTube uses two design features that induce flow state. The first is its panel of recommended videos. YouTube recommends videos both on the home page and on each video

⁷⁷⁰ YouTube rolling out black dark theme, 'Ambient Mode,' and other video player updates (Oct. 24, 2022), <https://9to5google.com/2022/10/24/youtube-ambient-mode/>.

⁷⁷¹ See, e.g., Lauren E. Sherman et al., *The Power of the Like in Adolescence: Effects of Peer Influence on Neural and Behavioral Responses to Social Media*, 27(7) Psych. Sci. 1027–35 (July 2016), <https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC5387999/>.

page in the “Up Next” panel.⁷⁷² This panel pushes an endless stream of videos that YouTube’s algorithm selects and “suggests” to keep users watching by teasing a pipeline of upcoming content.

738. The second feature is autoplay, which complements the Up Next panel and seamlessly takes users through the list of upcoming videos without users having to affirmatively click on or search for other videos. This constant video stream—comprised of videos recommended by YouTube’s algorithm—is the primary way Google increases the time users spend using its platform. This endless video succession induces users to enter a flow state of consumption, which is particularly dangerous for children.

739. In an April 2021 letter to YouTube CEO Susan Wojcicki, the House Committee on Oversight and Reform criticized the autoplay feature:

This places the onus on the child to stop their viewing activity, rather than providing a natural break or end point. Without that natural stopping point, children are likely to continue watching for long periods of time.⁷⁷³

740. This defect is particularly acute for Google’s recently launched YouTube Shorts. YouTube Shorts enables users to create short videos up to sixty seconds in length, in a full-screen format popularized by TikTok and copied by Instagram Reels. As in Reels and TikTok, Shorts are presented in an algorithmically generated feed; users can watch new videos by swiping up on their smartphones. Instead of presenting videos chronologically, they are organized in a manner to drive the most watch time, as dictated by the algorithm. Indeed, Google hired TikTok’s North American head, Kevin Ferguson, and other TikTok engineers to develop YouTube Shorts.⁷⁷⁴ And much like

⁷⁷² Recommended Videos, YouTube, <https://www.youtube.com/howyoutubeworks/product-features/recommendations/>.

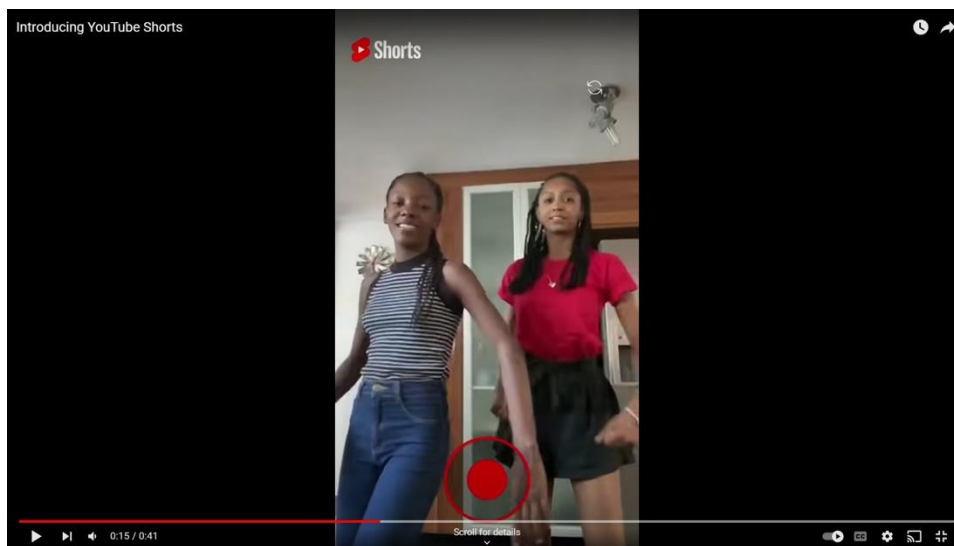
⁷⁷³ Letter from Rep. Raja Krishnamoorthi, Chairman, Subcomm. on Economic and Consumer Policy, to Susan Wojcicki, CEO, YouTube (Apr. 6, 2021), <https://oversightdemocrats.house.gov/sites/democrats.oversight.house.gov/files/2021-04-06.RK%20to%20Wojcicki-YouTube%20re%20YouTube%20Kids%20Content.pdf>,

⁷⁷⁴ Richard Nieva, *In the Age of TikTok, YouTube Shorts Is a Platform in Limbo*, Forbes (Dec. 20, 2022), <https://www.forbes.com/sites/richardnieva/2022/12/20/youtube-shorts-monetization-multiformat/>.

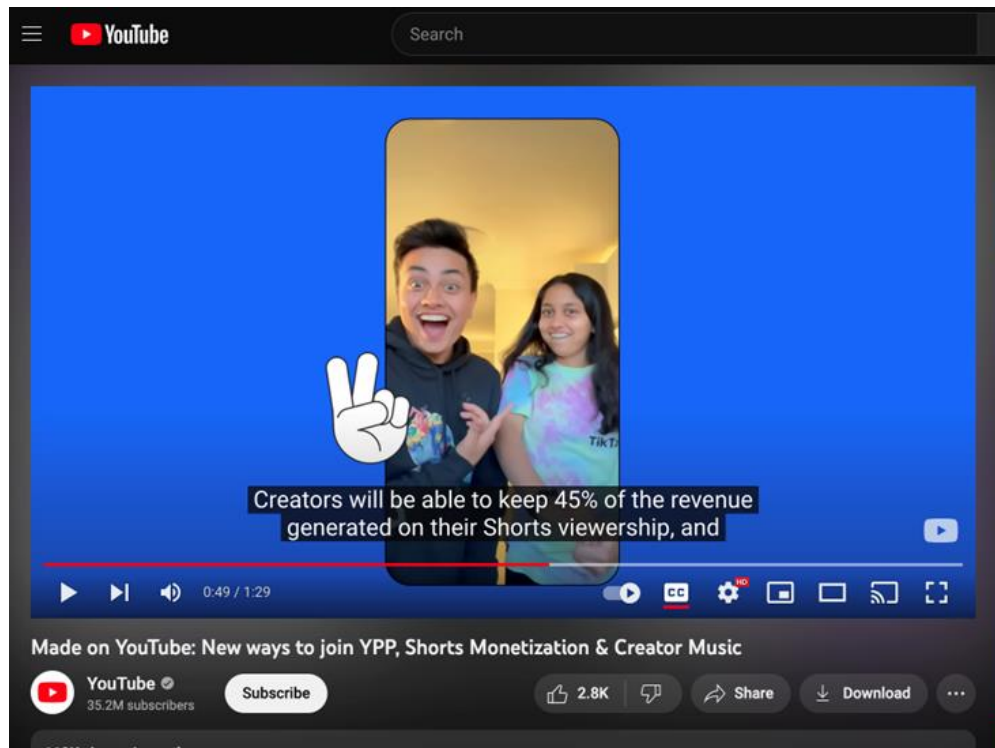
those other platforms, the ability to scroll continuously through YouTube Shorts content induces a “flow-state,” distorting users’ sense of time and facilitating extended use.

741. An important target audience for YouTube Shorts is children. For example, YouTube Shorts features content, such as child “influencers,” that appeals to children. YouTube Shorts also contains similar defects to other Defendants’ short form platforms, including the ability to scroll continuously through YouTube Shorts, inducing a “flow-state” that distorts users’ sense of time and facilitates extended use, and dangerous exploitation of “social comparison” techniques by promoting misleadingly idealized portrayals from influencers and others who are rewarded for posting popular material.

742. Almost immediately upon launch, Google began marketing YouTube Shorts to children. For example, Google launched an advertisement featuring images of children and teenagers (like in the screenshot below) engaging with the YouTube Shorts platform.



743. Similarly, another advertisement for Shorts explains how creators on YouTube can keep revenue generated by their Shorts viewership, while an image of a video creator young enough to be in braces appears on screen.⁷⁷⁵



744. Shorts is one of YouTube's interrelated design features that exploit known mental processes to induce YouTube users to use the platform more frequently, for more extended periods, and with more intensity (i.e., providing more comments and likes). Not surprisingly, given its copycat origin, the defects in Shorts replicate the defects in TikTok and Instagram Reels, discussed above. Google knows or should have known that children, whose brains are still developing, are particularly susceptible to such addictive features.

745. YouTube has monetized users' susceptibility to IVR by allowing creators who obtain more than a thousand subscribers with four-thousand valid public watch hours to qualify

⁷⁷⁵ YouTube, *Made on YouTube: New ways to join YPP, Shorts Monetization & Creator Music* (Sept. 20, 2022), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=h6TrvCV3NdU>.

for the YouTube Partner Program. Once a creator obtains this elite status, they are rewarded with “Super Chat” and “Super Stickers”—special images or distinct messages that other users can purchase and place on a creator’s channel.⁷⁷⁶ Paid messages, including the amount donated, are visible to all users. And the more a user pays for these promotions, the more prominent and longer the image is displayed. Both features are intended to allow a user to show support for, or connect with, their favorite YouTube creators. Similar to the “Likes” feature, this paid support activates the reward center of the content creator’s brain and releases dopamine while the creator is generating revenue for YouTube.

3. Google’s algorithms are designed to maximize “watch time.”

746. Google engineers algorithms to recommend videos to YouTube users.

747. YouTube began building its’ algorithms in 2008.⁷⁷⁷ Its goal was to maximize how long users spent watching YouTube videos.⁷⁷⁸

748. These algorithms select videos that populate the YouTube homepage, rank results in user searches, and push videos for viewers to watch through the “Up Next” feature.

749. YouTube designed its algorithms to manipulate users and induce them to use YouTube excessively.

750. A former YouTube engineer explained that when he designed YouTube’s algorithm, YouTube wanted to optimize for one key metric: “watch time.”⁷⁷⁹ The engineer

⁷⁷⁶ YouTube Partner Program: How to Make Money on YouTube, https://www.youtube.com/intl/en_us/creators/how-things-work/video-monetization/.

⁷⁷⁷ Cristos Goodrow, *On YouTube’s Recommendation System*, YouTube (Sept. 15, 2021), <https://blog.youtube/inside-youtube/on-youtubes-recommendation-system/>.

⁷⁷⁸ Ben Popken, *As Algorithms Take Over, YouTube’s Recommendations Highlight a Human Problem*, NBC (Apr. 19, 2018), <https://www.nbcnews.com/tech/social-media/algorithms-take-over-youtube-s-recommendations-highlight-human-problem-n867596>.

⁷⁷⁹ William Turton, *How YouTube’s Algorithm Prioritizes Conspiracy Theories*, Vice (Mar. 5, 2018), <https://www.vice.com/en/article/d3w9ja/how-youtubes-algorithm-prioritizes-conspiracy-theories>.

elaborated that “[i]ncreasing users’ watch time is good for YouTube’s business model” because it increases advertising revenue.⁷⁸⁰

751. In 2012 the YouTube Head of Content Creator Communications, similarly explained: “When we suggest videos, we focus on those that increase the amount of time that the viewer will spend watching videos on YouTube, not only on the next view, but also successive views thereafter.”⁷⁸¹

752. The current algorithm uses deep-learning neural networks, a type of software that returns outputs based on data fed into it.⁷⁸² The VP of Engineering at YouTube, explained that it is “constantly evolving, learning every day from over 80 billion pieces of information [Google] calls signals.”⁷⁸³ Those signals include “watch and search history . . . , channel subscriptions, clicks, watchtime, survey responses, and sharing, likes, and dislikes.”⁷⁸⁴ They also include user demographic information like age and gender.⁷⁸⁵

753. Google’s algorithm also “uses data from your Google Account activity to influence your recommendations.”⁷⁸⁶

⁷⁸⁰ Jesselyn Cook & Sebastian Murdock, *YouTube Is a Pedophile’s Paradise*, Huffington Post (Mar. 20, 2020), https://www.huffpost.com/entry/youtube-pedophile-paradise_n_5e5d79d1c5b6732f50e6b4db.

⁷⁸¹ Eric Meyerson, *YouTube Now: Why We Focus on Watch Time*, YouTube (Aug. 10, 2012), <https://blog.youtube/news-and-events/youtube-now-why-we-focus-on-watch-time/>.

⁷⁸² Alexis C. Madrigal, *How YouTube’s Algorithm Really Works*, Atlantic (Nov. 8, 2018), <https://www.theatlantic.com/technology/archive/2018/11/how-youtubes-algorithm-really-works/575212/>; Paul Covington et al., *Deep Neural Networks for YouTube Recommendations*, Google (2016), <https://storage.googleapis.com/pub-tools-public-publication-data/pdf/45530.pdf>.

⁷⁸³ Cristos Goodrow, *On YouTube’s Recommendation System*, YouTube (Sept. 15, 2021), <https://blog.youtube/inside-youtube/on-youtubes-recommendation-system/>.

⁷⁸⁴ Cristos Goodrow, *On YouTube’s Recommendation System*, YouTube (Sept. 15, 2021), <https://blog.youtube/inside-youtube/on-youtubes-recommendation-system/>.

⁷⁸⁵ Paul Covington et al., *Deep Neural Networks for YouTube Recommendations*, Google (2016), <https://storage.googleapis.com/pub-tools-public-publication-data/pdf/45530.pdf>.

⁷⁸⁶ Manage Your Recommendations and Search Results, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/6342839?hl=en&co=GENIE.Platform%3DAndroid>.

754. The algorithm “develops dynamically” to predict which posts will hold the user’s attention.⁷⁸⁷ That is, it can also determine which “signals” are more important to individual users. For example, if a user shares every video they watch, including those they rate low, the algorithm learns to discount the significance of the user’s shares when recommending content.⁷⁸⁸

755. Besides the algorithm’s self-learning capability, Google also consistently refines the algorithm, updating it “multiple times a month.”⁷⁸⁹

756. In 2017, the former technical lead for YouTube recommendations explained that “one of the key things [the algorithm] does is it’s able to generalize.”⁷⁹⁰ While older iterations “were pretty good at saying, here’s another [video] just like” ones the user had watched, by 2017, the algorithm could discern “patterns that are less obvious,” identifying “adjacent relationships” of “similar but not exactly the same” content.⁷⁹¹

757. Over time, the algorithm became increasingly successful in getting users to watch recommended content. By 2018, YouTube Chief Product Officer Neal Mohan said that the YouTube algorithm was responsible for more than 70% of users’ time using the platform.⁷⁹² That is, more than 70% of the time users spend on YouTube was from recommendations Google’s algorithm pushed to them rather than videos identified by users through independent searches.

⁷⁸⁷ Cristos Goodrow, *On YouTube’s Recommendation System*, YouTube (Sept. 15, 2021), <https://blog.youtube/inside-youtube/on-youtubes-recommendation-system/>.

⁷⁸⁸ Cristos Goodrow, *On YouTube’s Recommendation System*, YouTube (Sept. 15, 2021), <https://blog.youtube/inside-youtube/on-youtubes-recommendation-system/>.

⁷⁸⁹ Nilay Patel, *YouTube Chief Product Officer Neal Mohan on The Algorithm, Monetization, and the Future for Creators*, Verge (Aug. 3, 2021), <https://www.theverge.com/22606296/youtube-shorts-fund-neal-mohan-decoder-interview>.

⁷⁹⁰ Casey Newton, *How YouTube Perfected the Feed*, Verge (Aug. 30, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/8/30/16222850/youtube-google-brain-algorithm-video-recommendation-personalized-feed>.

⁷⁹¹ Casey Newton, *How YouTube Perfected the Feed*, Verge (Aug. 30, 2017), <https://www.theverge.com/2017/8/30/16222850/youtube-google-brain-algorithm-video-recommendation-personalized-feed>.

⁷⁹² Joan E. Solsman, *YouTube’s AI Is the Puppet Master over Most of What You Watch*, CNET (Jan. 20, 2018), <https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/youtube-ces-2018-neal-mohan/>.

758. The algorithm also keeps users watching for longer periods. For instance, Mohan explained that mobile device users watch for more than 60 minutes on average per session “because of what our recommendations engines are putting in front of [them].”⁷⁹³

759. The algorithm is particularly effective at addicting teenagers to the platform. In 2022, Pew Research Center found that “[a]bout three-quarters of teens visit YouTube daily, including 19% who report using the site or app almost constantly.”⁷⁹⁴

760. A software engineer explained that the algorithm is “an addiction engine.”⁷⁹⁵ He raised concerns with YouTube staff, who said they had no intention to change the algorithms. After all, the engineer explained, the algorithm works as intended: “it makes a lot of money.”⁷⁹⁶

761. Since users watch more than one billion hours of YouTube videos daily and approximately 70% of the time is spent on videos pushed to users by YouTube’s “recommendation engine,” Google’s algorithms are responsible for hundreds of millions of hours users spend watching videos on YouTube each day.⁷⁹⁷

762. The videos pushed out to users by Google’s “recommendation engine” are more likely to be addictive and more likely to lead to harm. For example, “fear-inducing videos cause the brain to receive a small amount of dopamine,” which acts as a reward and creates a desire to do something over and over.⁷⁹⁸ That dopaminergic response makes it more likely that a user will

⁷⁹³ Joan E. Solsman, *YouTube’s AI Is the Puppet Master over Most of What You Watch*, CNET (Jan. 20, 2018), <https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/youtube-cs-2018-neal-mohan/>

⁷⁹⁴ Emily Vogels et al., *Teens, Social Media and Technology 2022*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (Aug. 10, 2022), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2022/08/10/teens-social-media-and-technology-2022>.

⁷⁹⁵ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁷⁹⁶ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁷⁹⁷ See Joan E. Solsman, *YouTube’s AI Is the Puppet Master over Most of What You Watch*, CNET (Jan. 10, 2018), <https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/youtube-cs-2018-neal-mohan/>.

⁷⁹⁸ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnn.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

watch the harmful video, which the algorithm interprets as signaling interest and preference. Former Google engineers told the Wall Street Journal that “[t]he algorithm doesn’t seek out extreme videos . . . but looks for clips that data show are already drawing high traffic and keeping people on the site. Those videos often tend to be sensationalist.”⁷⁹⁹ An investigation by *Bloomberg* put it simply: “In the race to one billion hours, a formula emerged: Outrage equals attention.”⁸⁰⁰

763. Google’s algorithm makes it more likely for children to encounter harmful content by pushing them down “rabbit holes,” which “[lead] viewers to incrementally more extreme videos or topics, which . . . hook them in.”⁸⁰¹ For example, a user might “[w]atch clips about bicycling, and YouTube might suggest shocking bike race crashes.”⁸⁰² In this way, the algorithm makes it more likely that youth will encounter content that is violent, sexual, or encourages self-harm, among other types of harmful content.

764. YouTube’s “recommendation engine” creates a vicious cycle in its ruthless quest to grow view time. Users who get pushed down rabbit holes then become *models* for the algorithm. And the algorithm consequently emphasizes that harmful content, disproportionately pushing it to more users. That is, because Google designed the algorithm to “maximize engagement,”

⁷⁹⁹ Why is YouTube Suggesting Extreme and Misleading Content (2/7/2018), <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7AjA3Df6i6o>; see also Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸⁰⁰ Mark Bergen, *YouTube Executives Ignored Warnings, Letting Toxic Videos Run Rampant*, Bloomberg (Apr. 2, 2019), <https://www.bloomberg.com/news/features/2019-04-02/youtube-executives-ignored-warnings-letting-toxic-videos-run-rampant>.

⁸⁰¹ Max Fisher & Amanda Taub, *On YouTube’s Digital Playground, an Open Gate for Pedophiles*, NY Times (June 3, 2019), <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/03/world/americas/youtube-pedophiles.html>.

⁸⁰² Max Fisher & Amanda Taub, *On YouTube’s Digital Playground, an Open Gate for Pedophiles*, NY Times (June 3, 2019), <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/03/world/americas/youtube-pedophiles.html>.

uncommonly engaged users become “models to be reproduced.”⁸⁰³ Thus, the algorithms will “favor the content of such users,” which is often more extreme.⁸⁰⁴

765. The algorithm also makes extreme content less likely to get flagged or reported. As Guillaume Chaslot explained, the algorithm becomes “more efficient” over time “at recommending specific user-targeted content.”⁸⁰⁵ And as the algorithm improves, “it will be able to more precisely predict who is interested in [harmful or extreme] content.”⁸⁰⁶ So “problems with the algorithm become exponentially harder to notice, as [harmful] content is unlikely to be flagged or reported.”⁸⁰⁷

766. Even on YouTube Kids, Google’s platform designed for children under 13 years old, researchers from the Tech Transparency Project found that the platform’s algorithm fed children content related to drugs and guns, as well as beauty and diet tips that risked creating harmful body image issues. For example, the researchers found videos speaking positively about cocaine and crystal meth; instructing users, step-by-step, how to conceal a gun; explaining how to bleach one’s face at home; and stressing the importance of burning calories.⁸⁰⁸

⁸⁰³ Guillaume Chaslot, *The Toxic Potential of YouTube’s Feedback Loop*, Wired (Jul. 13, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/the-toxic-potential-of-youtubes-feedback-loop/>.

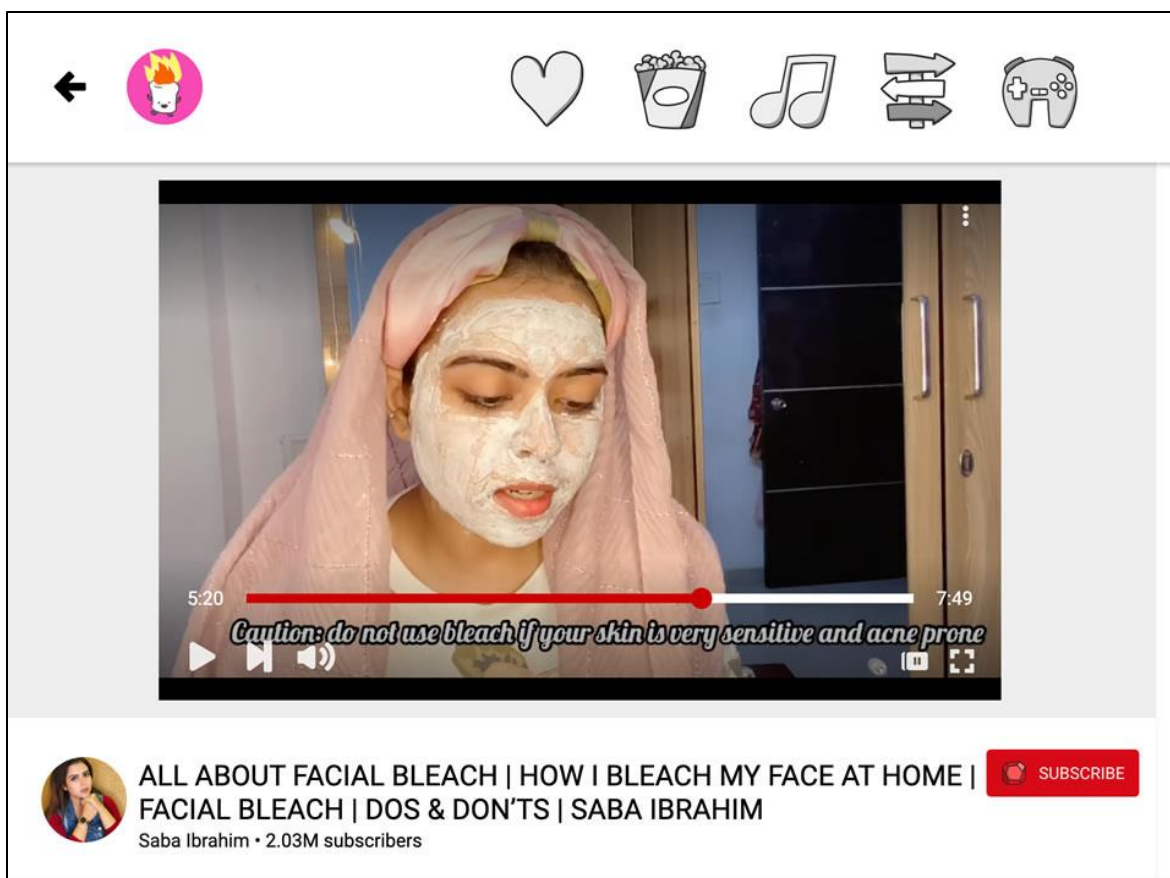
⁸⁰⁴ Guillaume Chaslot, *The Toxic Potential of YouTube’s Feedback Loop*, Wired (Jul. 13, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/the-toxic-potential-of-youtubes-feedback-loop/>.

⁸⁰⁵ Guillaume Chaslot, *The Toxic Potential of YouTube’s Feedback Loop*, Wired (Jul. 13, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/the-toxic-potential-of-youtubes-feedback-loop/>.

⁸⁰⁶ Guillaume Chaslot, *The Toxic Potential of YouTube’s Feedback Loop*, Wired (Jul. 13, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/the-toxic-potential-of-youtubes-feedback-loop/>.

⁸⁰⁷ Guillaume Chaslot, *The Toxic Potential of YouTube’s Feedback Loop*, Wired (Jul. 13, 2019), <https://www.wired.com/story/the-toxic-potential-of-youtubes-feedback-loop/>.

⁸⁰⁸ *Guns, Drugs, and Skin Bleaching: YouTube Kids Poses Risks to Children*, Tech Transparency Project (May 5, 2022), <https://www.techtransparencyproject.org/articles/guns-drugs-and-skin-bleaching-youtube-kids-still-poses-risks-children>.



767. Amy Kloer, a campaign director with the child safety group Parents Together, spent an hour on her preschool-age child’s YouTube Kids account and found videos “encouraging kids how to make their shirts sexier, a video in which a little boy pranks a girl over her weight, and a video in which an animated dog pulls objects out of an unconscious animated hippo’s butt.”⁸⁰⁹ Another parent recounted how YouTube Kids autoplay feature led her 6-year-old daughter to “an animated video that encouraged suicide.”⁸¹⁰

768. These are not isolated examples. According to Pew Research Center, 46% of parents of children 11 or younger report that children encountered videos that were inappropriate

⁸⁰⁹ Rebecca Heilweil, *YouTube’s Kids App Has a Rabbit Hole Problem*, Vox (May 12, 2021), <https://www.vox.com/recode/22412232/youtube-kids-autoplay>

⁸¹⁰ Rebecca Heilweil, *YouTube’s Kids App Has a Rabbit Hole Problem*, Vox (May 12, 2021), <https://www.vox.com/recode/22412232/youtube-kids-autoplay>

for their age.⁸¹¹ And kids do not “choose” to encounter those inappropriate videos—YouTube’s algorithm—its “recommendation engine”—directs and pushes them there. Again, YouTube’s algorithm is responsible for 70% of the time users spend using the platform.⁸¹²

769. Other reports have confirmed that YouTube’s algorithm pushes users towards harmful conduct. In 2021, the Mozilla Foundation studied 37,000 YouTube users, finding that 71% of all reported negative user experiences came from videos recommended to users by Google’s algorithm.⁸¹³ And users were 40% more likely to report a negative experience from a video recommended by YouTube’s algorithm than from one they searched for.⁸¹⁴ Importantly, videos that elicited those negative experiences “acquired 70% more views per day than other videos watched by [study] volunteers.”⁸¹⁵

770. Those defects combine to compel children and teenagers to overuse a platform that feeds them harmful content, which in turn can adversely affect mental health. One 10-year-old girl in the Mozilla Foundation study who sought “dance videos, ended up encountering videos promoting extreme dieting.”⁸¹⁶ Her mother explained that “[s]he is now restricting her eating and drinking.”⁸¹⁷ Another middle-schooler compulsively consumed YouTube videos every day after

⁸¹¹ Brooke Auxier et al., *Parenting Children in The Age of Screens*, Pew Rsch. Ctr. (July 28, 2020), <https://www.pewresearch.org/internet/2020/07/28/parental-views-about-youtube/>.

⁸¹² Joan E. Solsman, *YouTube’s AI Is the Puppet Master over Most of What You Watch*, CNET (Jan. 20, 2018), <https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/youtube-ces-2018-neal-mohan/>.

⁸¹³ YouTube Regrets: A Crowdsourced Investigations into YouTube’s Recommendation Algorithm, Mozilla Foundation 13 (July 2021), <https://assets.mofoprod.net/network/documents/Mozilla YouTube Regrets Report.pdf>.

⁸¹⁴ YouTube Regrets: A Crowdsourced Investigations into YouTube’s Recommendation Algorithm, Mozilla Foundation at 3 (July 2021), <https://assets.mofoprod.net/network/documents/Mozilla YouTube Regrets Report.pdf>.

⁸¹⁵ YouTube Regrets: A Crowdsourced Investigations into YouTube’s Recommendation Algorithm, Mozilla Foundation at 3 (July 2021), <https://assets.mofoprod.net/network/documents/Mozilla YouTube Regrets Report.pdf>.

⁸¹⁶ YouTube Regrets: A Crowdsourced Investigations into YouTube’s Recommendation Algorithm, Mozilla Foundation at 13 (July 2021), <https://assets.mofoprod.net/network/documents/Mozilla YouTube Regrets Report.pdf>.

⁸¹⁷ YouTube Regrets: A Crowdsourced Investigations into YouTube’s Recommendation Algorithm, Mozilla Foundation at 13 (July 2021), <https://assets.mofoprod.net/network/documents/Mozilla YouTube Regrets Report.pdf>.

she came home from school.⁸¹⁸ Eventually, she became depressed and “got the idea to overdose online.”⁸¹⁹ Three weeks later, she “down[ed] a bottle of Tylenol.” She landed in rehab for digital addiction due to her compulsive YouTube watching.⁸²⁰

771. Those experiences are not unique. Mental health experts have warned that YouTube is a growing source of anxiety and inappropriate sexual behavior among kids under 13 years old. Natasha Daniels, a child psychotherapist, described treating children between 8 and 10 years old, who were “found doing sexual things: oral sex, kissing and getting naked and acting out sexual poses.”⁸²¹ This kind of behavior “usually indicates some sort of sexual abuse.”⁸²² Previously, Daniels would typically “find a child who has been molested himself or that an adult has been grooming the child from abuse.”⁸²³ But “in the last five years, when I follow the trail all the way back, it’s YouTube and that’s where it ends.”⁸²⁴

772. Daniels has also seen increased rates of anxiety among children using YouTube. And because of that anxiety, those children “exhibit loss of appetite, sleeplessness, crying fits, and

⁸¹⁸ Lesley McClurg, *After Compulsively Watching YouTube, Teenage Girl Lands in Rehab for ‘Digital Addiction’*, PBS (May 16, 2017), <https://www.pbs.org/newshour/health/compulsively-watching-youtube-teenage-girl-lands-rehab-digital-addiction>.

⁸¹⁹ Lesley McClurg, *After Compulsively Watching YouTube, Teenage Girl Lands in Rehab for ‘Digital Addiction’*, PBS (May 16, 2017), <https://www.pbs.org/newshour/health/compulsively-watching-youtube-teenage-girl-lands-rehab-digital-addiction>.

⁸²⁰ Lesley McClurg, *After Compulsively Watching YouTube, Teenage Girl Lands in Rehab for ‘Digital Addiction’*, PBS (May 16, 2017), <https://www.pbs.org/newshour/health/compulsively-watching-youtube-teenage-girl-lands-rehab-digital-addiction>.

⁸²¹ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸²² Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸²³ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸²⁴ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

fear.”⁸²⁵ Ultimately, she says, “YouTube is an ongoing conversation in my therapy practice, which indicates there’s a problem.”⁸²⁶

773. One study determined that using Google’s platform was “consistently associated with negative sleep outcomes.”⁸²⁷ Specifically, for every 15 minutes teens spent using YouTube, they were 24% less likely to get seven hours of sleep. According to Dr. Alon Avidan, director of the UCLA Sleep Disorders Center, YouTube is particularly sleep disruptive because its recommendation algorithm and autoplay features make it “so easy to finish one video” and watch the next.⁸²⁸ Similarly, a signal that the YouTube algorithm relies on is the ‘time of day’ a user is watching—a signal that, when used to maximize length of duration with the YouTube platform, induces sleep deprivation.⁸²⁹

774. Sleep deprivation is, in turn, associated with poor health outcomes. For example, “insufficient sleep negatively affects cognitive performance, mood, immune function, cardiovascular risk, weight, and metabolism.”⁸³⁰

775. Compulsively consuming harmful content on YouTube can also harm brain development. According to Donna Volpitta, Ed.D, “[c]hildren who repeatedly experience stressful and/or fearful emotions may under develop parts of their brain’s prefrontal cortex and frontal lobe,

⁸²⁵ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnn.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸²⁶ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnn.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸²⁷ Meg Pillion et al., *What’s ‘app’-ning to adolescent sleep? Links between device, app use, and sleep outcomes*, 100 Sleep Med. 174–82 (Dec. 2022), <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/abs/pii/S1389945722010991?via%3Dihub>.

⁸²⁸ Cara Murez, *One App Is Especially Bad for Teens’ Sleep*, U.S. News & World Rep. (Sept. 13, 2022), <https://www.usnews.com/news/health-news/articles/2022-09-13/one-app-is-especially-bad-for-teens-sleep>.

⁸²⁹ YouTube, *How YouTube Works*, <https://www.youtube.com/howyoutubeworks/product-features/recommendations/#signals-used-to-recommend-content>.

⁸³⁰ Jessica C. Levenson et al., *The Association Between Social Media Use and Sleep Disturbance Among Young Adults*, 85 Preventive Med. 36–41 (Apr. 2016), <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/abs/pii/S0091743516000025>.

the parts of the brain responsible for executive functions, like making conscious choices and planning ahead.”⁸³¹

776. Google’s algorithm also promotes the creation of and pushes children towards extremely dangerous prank or “challenge” videos, which often garner thousands of “Likes,” adding to the pressure children feel to participate.⁸³² The neurological and psychological techniques by which Google, like other Defendants, fosters excessive, addictive use of YouTube in turn foster watching “challenge” videos.

777. Even though Google knew or should have known of these risks to its youth users, Google’s platform lacks any warnings that foreseeable platform use could cause these harms.

778. And despite all the evidence that YouTube’s design and algorithms harm millions of children, Google continues to manipulate users and compel them to use the platform excessively, to enhance Google’s bottom line. As a result, young people are confronted with more and more extreme videos, often resulting in significant harm.

4. YouTube’s dangerous features include impediments to discontinuing use.

779. As with other Defendants, Google has intentionally and dangerously designed its platforms so that adolescent users face significant navigational obstacles and hurdles when trying to delete or deactivate their accounts, in contrast to the ease with which users can create those accounts.

780. *First*, because YouTube is accessible without a user needing to log in, YouTube users cannot prevent themselves from being able to access YouTube by deleting their YouTube account.

⁸³¹ Josephine Bila, *YouTube’s Dark Side Could be Affecting Your Child’s Mental Health*, CNBC (Feb. 13, 2018), <https://www.cnbc.com/2018/02/13/youtube-is-causing-stress-and-sexualization-in-young-children.html>.

⁸³² See, e.g., ViralBrothers, *Revenge 9 – Cheating Prank Turns into Suicide Prank*, YouTube (June 11, 2014), https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Bf7xIjz_wv0.

781. *Second*, YouTube accounts are linked to a user's broader Google account. These accounts are structured such that, for a user to delete a YouTube account, the user must also delete the user's entire Google account. This means that if a YouTube user uses Google's other platforms those accounts will be lost as well. This structure holds hostage user data—if a child needs to keep their email account through Google (for instance, if that is a requirement of their school), they cannot delete their YouTube account, even if they want to. If a user stores family photos in Google Photos, but wants to delete their YouTube account, they must choose between storage for their photos or deleting their YouTube account. Similarly, if a user has purchased books or movies through Google's digital market Google Play, the user's copy of those books or movies will be deleted if the user deletes their Google account to rid themselves of YouTube. Google explicitly threatens users with this consequence on the page where users can delete their account, listing every associated account Google will delete and providing examples of the kinds of content that will be deleted if a user does not back down from their desire to delete their YouTube account.

782. *Third*, Google intentionally designed its platform so that to delete a user's Google account, a user must locate and tap on six different buttons (through six different pages and popups) from YouTube's main feed to delete an account successfully. This requires navigating away from YouTube and into the webpages of other Google platforms. As with Meta, users are still able to recover their accounts after deletion—though unlike Meta, Google does not tell users when their accounts will become unrecoverable, simply threatening that they will soon after deletion.

D. Google facilitates the spread of CSAM and child exploitation.

783. Various design features of YouTube promote and dramatically exacerbate sexual exploitation, the spread of CSAM, sextortion, and other socially maladaptive behavior that harms children.

784. Google is required to comply with COPPA and obtain verifiable parental consent before collecting personal information from children. It fails to do so. In 2019, the FTC and New York Attorney General alleged in a federal complaint that Google and YouTube violated COPPA by collecting personal information from children without verifiable parental consent.⁸³³

785. Google and YouTube collected persistent identifiers that they used to track viewers of child-directed channels across the Internet without prior parental notification, in violation of Sections 1303(c), 1305(a)(1), and 1306(d) of COPPA.⁸³⁴

786. Google and YouTube designed the child-centered YouTube Kids platform. Despite its clear knowledge of this channel being directed to children under 13 years old, Google served targeted advertisements on these channels.⁸³⁵

787. Google pays its users to create content because it benefits from increased user activity and receives something of value for its YouTube Partner Program.⁸³⁶

788. Google allows users to monetize its platform to generate revenue for itself and its users, including users that violate laws prohibiting the sexual exploitation of children.

⁸³³ Fed. Trade Comm’n, Google and YouTube Will Pay Record \$170 Million for Alleged Violations of Children’s Privacy Law (2022), <https://www.ftc.gov/news-events/news/press-releases/2019/09/google-youtube-will-pay-record-170-million-alleged-violations-childrens-privacy-law>.

⁸³⁴ Fed. Trade Comm’n, Google and YouTube Will Pay Record \$170 Million for Alleged Violations of Children’s Privacy Law (2022), <https://www.ftc.gov/news-events/news/press-releases/2019/09/google-youtube-will-pay-record-170-million-alleged-violations-childrens-privacy-law>.

⁸³⁵ Fed. Trade Comm’n, Google and YouTube Will Pay Record \$170 Million for Alleged Violations of Children’s Privacy Law (2022), <https://www.ftc.gov/news-events/news/press-releases/2019/09/google-youtube-will-pay-record-170-million-alleged-violations-childrens-privacy-law>.

⁸³⁶ YouTube Partner Program overview & eligibility, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/72851?hl=en>.

789. According to its own guidelines, Google prohibits using its social media platform in ways that “[endanger] the emotional and physical well-being of minors.”⁸³⁷

790. Google represents that YouTube “has strict policies and robust operations in place to tackle content and behavior that is harmful or exploitative to children.”⁸³⁸

791. Google maintains that its guidelines prohibit images, videos, and comments that put children at risk, “including areas such as unwanted sexualization, abuse, and harmful and dangerous acts.”⁸³⁹

792. While Google “may place an age restriction on the video,”⁸⁴⁰ its platform fails to implement proper age-verification mechanisms to prevent minor users from accessing age-restricted content, as discussed above.

793. Google fails to prevent collages of images and videos of children showing their exposed buttocks, underwear, and genitals from racking up millions of views, on its platform which are then promoted and monetized by displaying advertisements from major brands alongside the content.⁸⁴¹

794. Through Google’s platform, videos of minors revealing their “bathing suit hauls,” playing in pools, beaches, waterparks, or performing gymnastics are recommended, shown, and promoted to child predators who interact with these videos, including commenting to share “time codes for crotch shots,” to direct others to similar videos, and to arrange to meet up on other social media platforms to share and exchange CSAM.⁸⁴²

⁸³⁷ Child safety policy - YouTube help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2801999?hl=en>.

⁸³⁸ Child safety policy - YouTube help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2801999?hl=en>.

⁸³⁹ Child safety policy - YouTube help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2801999?hl=en>.

⁸⁴⁰ Child safety policy - YouTube help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2801999?hl=en>.

⁸⁴¹ K.G Orphanides, *On YouTube, a network of pedophiles is hiding in plain sight* WIRED UK (2019), <https://www.wired.co.uk/article/youtube-pedophile-videos-advertising>.

⁸⁴² K.G Orphanides, *On YouTube, a network of pedophiles is hiding in plain sight* WIRED UK (2019), <https://www.wired.co.uk/article/youtube-pedophile-videos-advertising>.

795. Multiple YouTube channels dedicated to pre-teen models, young girls stretching, and teen beauty are routinely oversexualized and manipulated by predators.⁸⁴³

796. Google's platform recommends and promotes abusive behaviors towards children and victimizes unsuspecting minors on a mass scale.

797. When users search for images and videos of minors, Google's algorithm pushes additional videos, which strictly feature children, and this recommended content often includes promoted content for which Google receives value from advertisers.

798. Users of Google's platform who search for images and videos of minors are further inundated with comments from other predators that provide hyperlinks to CSAM and opportunities to share CSAM on other platforms.⁸⁴⁴

799. On average, Google pays its creators \$0.50 to \$6.00 per 1,000 views of any video they create, including materials depicting minors in violation of 18 U.S.C. §§ 2252, 2252A, 1591, 1466, and other criminal statutes.⁸⁴⁵

800. Google actively participates and receives value for creating content on its platform in violation of 18 U.S.C. §§ 2252, 2252A, 1591, 1466, and other criminal statutes.

801. Google actively participates and receives value for creating content on its platform in violation of laws prohibiting the sexual exploitation of children.

⁸⁴³ K.G Orphanides, On YouTube, a network of pedophiles is hiding in plain sight WIRED UK (2019), <https://www.wired.co.uk/article/youtube-pedophile-videos-advertising>.

⁸⁴⁴ K.G Orphanides, On YouTube, a network of pedophiles is hiding in plain sight WIRED UK (2019), <https://www.wired.co.uk/article/youtube-pedophile-videos-advertising>.

⁸⁴⁵ How YouTube creators earn money - how YouTube works, YouTube, <https://www.youtube.com/howyoutubeworks/product-features/monetization/#:~:text=Advertising%20is%20the%20primary%20way,directly%20profit%20from%20their%20work>.

802. Google maintains that it is “dedicated to stopping the spread of online child exploitation videos.”⁸⁴⁶ Yet, it fails to implement proper safeguards to prevent the spread of illegal contraband on its platform.

803. The troves of data and information about its users that Google collects enable it to detect, report as legally required, and take actions to prevent instances of sexual grooming, sextortion, and CSAM distribution, but it has failed to do so. Google continues to make false representations its “teams work around-the-clock to identify, remove, and report this content.”⁸⁴⁷

804. Google has proprietary technology, CSAI Match, that is supposed to combat CSAI (Child Sexual Abuse Imagery) content online. This technology allows Google to identify known CSAM contraband being promoted, shared, and downloaded on the YouTube platform. Google’s CSAI Match can identify which portion of the video matches known and previously hashed CSAM and provide a standardized categorization of the CSAM. When a match is detected by Google using CSAI Match, it is flagged so that Google can “responsibly report in accordance to local laws and regulations.”⁸⁴⁸

805. Despite this, Google routinely fails to flag CSAM, regularly fails to adequately report known content to NCMEC and law enforcement, and fails to takedown, remove, and demonetize CSAM.

806. Separate from CSAM detection, Google also implements an automated system called Content ID “to easily identify and manage [its] copyright-protected content on YouTube.”⁸⁴⁹ Videos uploaded to YouTube are “scanned against a database of audio and visual content that’s

⁸⁴⁶ YouTube, <https://www.youtube.com/csai-match/>.

⁸⁴⁷ Google’s efforts to combat online child sexual abuse material, <https://transparencyreport.google.com/child-sexual-abuse-material/reporting>.

⁸⁴⁸ Google’s efforts to combat online child sexual abuse material, <https://transparencyreport.google.com/child-sexual-abuse-material/reporting>.

⁸⁴⁹ How Content ID Works – YouTube Help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2797370?hl=en>.

been submitted to YouTube by copyright owners,” and Google can block, monetize, and track that material automatically.⁸⁵⁰ Google only grants Content ID to copyright owners who meet its own specific criteria, and these criteria categorically exclude CSAM victims. Google fails to use Content ID systems to block, remove, demonetize, or report CSAM on its platform.

807. In 2018, Google launched “cutting-edge artificial intelligence (AI) that significantly advances [Google’s] existing technologies,” which Google claimed “drastically improved” detection of CSAM that is distributed by its YouTube platform.⁸⁵¹ These claims were false, and misled parents and children into believing its platform is safe for minors. Google failed to drastically improve the frequency of CSAM detection, reports, and takedowns on its platform.

808. Google claims that it will “continue to invest in technology and organizations to help fight the perpetrators of CSAM and to keep our platforms and our users safe from this type of abhorrent content.”⁸⁵² In reality, it fails to do so. Google fails to invest in adequate age verification and continues to fail to remove CSAM from its platform.

809. Google knows or should have known that YouTube facilitates the platform for, possession, distribution, receipt, transportation, and dissemination of millions of materials that depict obscene visual representations of the sexual abuse of children, or that violate child pornography laws, each year.

810. Google knowingly fails to take adequate and readily available measures to remove these contraband materials from its platform in a timely fashion.

⁸⁵⁰ How Content ID Works – YouTube Help, Google, <https://support.google.com/youtube/answer/2797370?hl=en>.

⁸⁵¹ Nikola Todorovic, *Using AI to help organizations detect and report Child sexual abuse material online* Google (2018), <https://blog.google/around-the-globe/google-europe/using-ai-help-organizations-detect-and-report-child-sexual-abuse-material-online/>.

⁸⁵² Nikola Todorovic, *Using AI to help organizations detect and report Child sexual abuse material online* Google (2018), <https://blog.google/around-the-globe/google-europe/using-ai-help-organizations-detect-and-report-child-sexual-abuse-material-online/>.

811. In violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2258A, Google knowingly fails to report massive amounts of material in violation of 18 U.S.C. § 2256 and 18 U.S.C. § 1466A.

812. YouTube is polluted with illegal material that promotes and facilitates the sexual exploitation of minors, and Google receives value in the form of increased user activity for the dissemination of these materials on its platforms.

813. Google failed to report materials in violation of the reporting requirements of 18 U.S.C. § 2258A.⁸⁵³

814. Google knows that its platform is unsafe for children and yet fails to implement safeguards to prevent children from accessing its platform.

815. Further, there is effectively no way for users to report CSAM on Google's YouTube platform. YouTube does not allow users to specifically report any material posted on its platform as CSAM or child pornography.⁸⁵⁴

816. YouTube Mobile does not provide any way to report users, including users who share CSAM on its platform. On the desktop, a viewer can report a user, but Google has made the reporting function difficult to access. Furthermore, reporting requires a viewer to have a Google account and be logged in to the account to make the report.⁸⁵⁵

E. Google failed to adequately warn the public about the harm its platforms cause or provide instructions regarding safe use.

817. Since YouTube's inception, Google has failed to adequately warn adolescent users about the physical and mental health risks its platform poses. These risks include, but are not limited to, platform abuse, addiction, and compulsive use; sexual exploitation from adult users;

⁸⁵³ NCMEC, 2019 CyberTipline reports by Electronic Service Providers (ESP), <https://www.missingkids.org/content/dam/missingkids/pdfs/2019-reports-by-esp.pdf>.

⁸⁵⁴ Canadian Centre for Child Protection, Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms, https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf.

⁸⁵⁵ Canadian Centre for Child Protection, Reviewing Child Sexual Abuse Material Reporting Functions on Popular Platforms, at 18 https://protectchildren.ca/pdfs/C3P_ReviewingCSAMMaterialReporting_en.pdf.

dissociative behavior; damage to body image; social isolation; impaired brain development; and a plethora of mental health disorders like body dysmorphia, eating disorders, anxiety, depression, insomnia, ADD/ADHD exacerbation, suicidal ideation, self-harm, and death.

818. Google targets adolescent users via advertising and marketing materials distributed throughout digital and traditional media platforms. Its advertising and marketing campaigns fail to provide adequate warnings to potential adolescent consumers of the physical and mental risks associated with using YouTube.

819. Google further fails to adequately warn adolescents during the platform registration process. At account setup, Google's platform contains no warning labels, banners, or conspicuous messaging to adequately inform adolescent users of the known risks and potential physical and mental harms associated with usage of its platform. Instead, Google allows adolescents to easily create an account (or multiple accounts), and to access YouTube with or without an account.

820. Google's lack of adequate warnings continues once an adolescent uses YouTube. Google does not adequately inform adolescent users that their data will be tracked, used to help build a unique algorithmic profile, and potentially sold to Google's advertising clients.

821. Google's failure to warn adolescent users continues even as adolescents exhibit problematic signs of addictive, compulsive use of YouTube. Google does not adequately warn users when their screen time reaches harmful levels or when adolescents are accessing the platform on a habitual and uncontrolled basis.

822. Not only does Google fail to adequately warn users regarding the risks associated with YouTube, it also does not provide adequate instructions on how adolescents can safely use its platform. A reasonable and responsible company would instruct adolescents on best practices and safety protocols when using a platform known to pose health risks.

823. Google also fails to adequately warn users that:

- a. sexual predators use YouTube to produce and distribute CSAM;
- b. adult predators targeting young children for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM are prevalent on YouTube;
- c. usage of YouTube can increase the risk of children being targeted and sexually exploited by adult predators; and,
- d. usage of YouTube can increase risky and uninhibited behavior in children, making them easier targets to adult predators for sexual exploitation, sextortion, and CSAM.

824. Google failed to adequately warn parents about all of the foregoing dangers and harms. Google's failure to adequately warn and instruct has proximately caused significant harm to adolescent users' mental and physical well-being.

TIMELINESS AND TOLLING OF STATUTES OF LIMITATIONS

825. Through the exercise of reasonable diligence, Plaintiff did not and could not have discovered that Defendants' platforms caused their injuries and/or sequelae thereto because, at the time of these injuries and/or sequelae thereto, the cause was unknown to Plaintiff.

826. Plaintiff did not suspect and had no reason to suspect Defendants' platforms caused their injuries and/or sequelae thereto until less than the applicable limitations period prior to the filing of this action.

827. Due to the highly technical nature of the platforms' features, Plaintiff was unable to independently discovery that Defendants' platforms caused their injuries and/or sequelae thereto until less than the applicable limitations period prior to the filing of this action.

828. Defendants had exclusive knowledge of the material defects designed and implemented into their platforms, and they have at all times through the present maintained their proprietary designs of their platforms' features as strictly confidential.

829. In addition, Defendants' fraudulent concealment and/or other tortious conduct has tolled the running of any statute of limitations.

830. Defendants had a duty to disclose dangerous features that cause foreseeable harm to children and teens.

831. Defendants knowingly, affirmatively, and actively concealed from Plaintiff the risks associated with the defects of Defendants' platforms and that these platforms caused their injuries and/or sequelae thereto.

832. Defendants committed tortious and/or fraudulent acts that continue to this day. As of the date of this Complaint, Defendants still have not disclosed, and continue to conceal, that they designed and implemented dangerous features into their platforms. Despite their knowledge of the defects and their attendant safety risks, Defendants continue to market their platforms to children and teens while simultaneously omitting the disclosure of known and foreseeable harms to children and teens.

833. Plaintiff was unaware and could not have reasonably known or learned through reasonable diligence that the harms they suffered were directly and proximately caused by Defendants' acts and omissions.

834. For the foregoing reasons, Defendants are estopped from relying on any statutes of limitation or repose as a defense in this action. All applicable statutes of limitation and repose have been tolled by operation of the discovery rule and by Defendants' active concealment with respect to all claims against Defendants.

CAUSES OF ACTION

COUNT I

PUBLIC NUISANCE (Against All Defendants)

835. Plaintiff realleges and incorporates by reference each preceding and succeeding paragraph as though set forth fully at length herein.

836. At all relevant times, each Defendant developed, set up, managed, maintained, operated, marketed, advertised, promoted, supervised, controlled, and benefitted from its respective social media platforms.

837. Plaintiff's students were foreseeable users of the Defendants' respective platforms.

838. Each Defendant knew that minors such as Plaintiff's students would use their respective platforms.

839. Each Defendant invited, solicited, encouraged, or reasonably should have foreseen the fact, extent, and manner of Plaintiff's students' use of Defendants' respective platforms.

840. Each Defendant knew or, by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known, that the reasonably foreseeable use of its respective platforms (as developed, set up, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated by that Defendant) was dangerous, harmful, and injurious when used by youth such as Plaintiff's students in a reasonably foreseeable manner.

841. At all relevant times, each Defendant knew or, by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known that its respective platforms (as developed, setup, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated by that Defendant) posed unreasonable risks of harm to youth such as Plaintiff's students, which risks were known and knowable, including in light of the internal data and knowledge each Defendant had regarding its platforms.

842. Each Defendant knew, or by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known, that ordinary youth users of its respective platforms, such as Plaintiff's students, would not have realized the potential risks and dangers of using the platform, including a risk of addiction, compulsive use, or excessive use, which foreseeably can lead to a cascade of negative effects,

including but not limited to dissociative behavior, withdrawal symptoms, social isolation, damage to body image and self-worth, increased risk behavior, exposure to predators, sexual exploitation and profound mental health issues for young consumers including but not limited to depression, body dysmorphia, anxiety, suicidal ideation, self-harm, insomnia, eating disorders, and death.

843. Each Defendant has substantially contributed to the ongoing youth mental health crisis through its affirmative malfeasance, actions, business decisions, and policies in the development, setup, management, maintenance, operation, marketing, advertising, promotion, supervision, and control of its respective platforms. Those acts include:

- a. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably creates or increases the foreseeable risk of addiction to, compulsive use of, or overuse of the platform by youth, including Plaintiff's students;
- b. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably creates or increases the foreseeable risk of harm to the physical and mental health and well-being of youth users, including Plaintiff's students, including but not limited to dissociative behavior, withdrawal symptoms, social isolation, depression, anxiety, suicide and suicidal ideation, body dysmorphia, self-harm, sleep deprivation, insomnia, eating disorders, and death;
- c. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably exposes youth users to sexual predators and sexual exploitation, including features that recommend or encourage youth users to connect with adult strangers on or through the platform;
- d. Maintaining unreasonably dangerous features and algorithms in their respective platforms after notice that such features and algorithms, as structured and operated, posed a foreseeable risk of harm to the physical and mental health and well-being of youth users;
- e. Facilitating use of their respective platforms by youth under the age of 13, including by adopting protocols that do not ask for or verify the age or identity of users or by adopting ineffective age and identity verification protocols; and

- f. Facilitating unsupervised and/or hidden use of their respective platforms by youth, including by adopting protocols that allow youth users to create multiple and private accounts and by offering features that allow youth users to delete, hide, or mask their usage.

844. Each Defendant has substantially contributed to the ongoing youth mental health crisis through its non-feasance, failure to act, and omissions in the development, setup, management, maintenance, operation, marketing, advertising, promotion, supervision, and control of its respective platforms. Those acts include:

- a. Failing to implement effective protocols to block users under the age of 13;
- b. Failing to implement effective parental controls;
- c. Failing to implement reasonably available means to monitor for and limit or deter excessive frequency or duration of use of platforms by youth, including patterns, frequency, or duration of use that are indicative of addiction, compulsive use, or overuse;
- d. Failing to implement reasonably available means to limit or deter use of platforms by youth during ordinary times for school or sleep;
- e. Failing to implement reasonably available means to set up and operate its platforms without algorithms and features, discussed above, that rely on unreasonably dangerous methods (such as endless scroll, autoplay, IVR, social comparison, and others) as a means to engage youth users;
- f. Failing to set up, monitor, and modify the algorithms used on their platforms to prevent the platforms from actively driving youth users into unsafe, distorted, and unhealthy online experiences, including highly sexualized, violent, and predatory environments and environments promoting eating disorders and suicide;
- g. Failing to implement reasonably available means to monitor for, report, and prevent the use of their platforms by sexual predators to victimize, abuse, and exploit youth users; and
- h. Failing to provide effective mechanisms for youth users and their parents/guardians to report abuse or misuse of the platforms.

845. A reasonable company under the same or similar circumstances as each Defendant would have developed, set up, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated its platforms in a manner that is safer for and more protective of youth users like Plaintiff's students.

846. Each Defendant's conduct constitutes a public nuisance because it unreasonably interferes with the rights of the members of Plaintiff's community, including students, teachers, staff, and other community members, to health, safety, and wellbeing.

847. The harm created by the youth mental health crisis far outweighs the interests of Defendants in marketing, distributing, and operating their social media platforms.

848. Plaintiff has directly experienced the harmful effects of youth social media addiction and the youth mental health crisis caused by Defendants' manipulative and exploitative social media platforms.

849. Each Defendant's conduct was a substantial factor in creating a public nuisance and causing harms and injuries to Plaintiff.

850. Plaintiff has been forced to spend substantial time, money, and resources to specifically address the harms caused by Defendants' social media platforms.

851. Plaintiff's injuries cannot be wholly remedied by monetary relief and such remedies at law are inadequate.

852. The nature of the fraudulent and unlawful acts that caused harm to Plaintiff students are not the type of risks that are immediately apparent from using Defendants' respective platforms. Many of Plaintiff's students are continuing to use Defendants' respective platforms. When Plaintiff's students use Defendants' respective platforms, they will not be independently able to verify whether Defendants' respective platforms continue to pose an unreasonable risk or

rely on Defendants' respective representations in the future. Such circumstances will continue to cause harm to Plaintiff.

853. Each Defendant's conduct, as described above, was intentional, fraudulent, willful, wanton, reckless, malicious, fraudulent, oppressive, extreme, and outrageous, and displayed an entire want of care and a conscious and depraved indifference to the consequences of their conduct, including to the health, safety, and welfare of their customers, and warrants an award of punitive damages in an amount sufficient to punish the Defendants and deter others from like conduct.

854. Plaintiff demands judgment against each Defendant for injunctive relief and for compensatory, treble, and punitive damages, together with interest, costs of suit, attorneys' fees, and all such other relief as the Court deems proper.

COUNT II

NEGLIGENCE (Against All Defendants)

855. Plaintiff realleges and incorporates by reference each preceding and succeeding paragraph as though set forth fully at length herein.

856. At all relevant times, each Defendant developed, set up, managed, maintained, operated, marketed, advertised, promoted, supervised, controlled, and benefitted from its respective social media platforms.

857. Each Defendant owed users and the general public, including Plaintiff, a duty to exercise reasonable care in the development, setup, management, maintenance, operation, marketing, advertising, promotion, supervision, and control of its respective platforms not to create an unreasonable risk of harm from and in the use of its platforms (including an unreasonable risk of addiction, compulsive use, sleep deprivation, anxiety, depression, or other physical or mental injuries); to protect users and the general public from unreasonable risk of injury from and in the

use of its platforms; not to invite, encourage, or facilitate users or the general public to foreseeably engage in dangerous or risky behavior through, on, or as a reasonably foreseeable result of using its platforms; and to provide truthful and honest information about the physical, mental, and emotional harm caused by its platforms.

858. Plaintiff's students were foreseeable users of the Defendants' respective platforms.

859. Each Defendant knew that minors such as Plaintiff's students would use their respective platforms.

860. Each Defendant invited, solicited, encouraged, or reasonably should have foreseen the fact, extent, and manner of Plaintiff's students' use of Defendants' respective platforms.

861. Each Defendant knew or, by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known, that the reasonably foreseeable use of its respective platforms (as developed, set up, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated by that Defendant) was dangerous, harmful, and injurious when used by youth such as Plaintiff's students in a reasonably foreseeable manner.

862. At all relevant times, each Defendant knew or, by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known that its respective platforms (as developed, setup, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated by that Defendant) posed unreasonable risks of harm to youth such as Plaintiff's students, which risks were known and knowable, including in light of the internal data and knowledge each Defendant had regarding its platforms.

863. Each Defendant knew, or by the exercise of reasonable care, should have known, that ordinary youth users of its respective platforms, such as Plaintiff's students, would not have realized the potential risks and dangers of using the platform, including a risk of addiction, compulsive use, or excessive use, which foreseeably can lead to a cascade of negative effects, including but not limited to dissociative behavior, withdrawal symptoms, social isolation, damage

to body image and self-worth, increased risk behavior, exposure to predators, sexual exploitation and profound mental health issues for young consumers including but not limited to depression, body dysmorphia, anxiety, suicidal ideation, self-harm, insomnia, eating disorders, and death.

864. Plaintiff is a caretaker of the health, safety, and wellbeing of its students, teachers, and staff and has a duty to provide educational services and care—including physical, mental, and emotional care—for the children of their community.

865. Each Defendant owed a duty of care to Plaintiff to avoid unreasonable risk of harm caused by their social media platforms because it is reasonably foreseeable that Plaintiff would bear the burden of providing physical, mental, and emotional care to its students arising out of the harmful effects of each Defendant's manipulative, addictive, and exploitative social media platforms.

866. Imposing a duty on Defendants would benefit the community at large.

867. Imposing a duty on Defendants would not be burdensome to them because they have the technological and financial means to avoid the risks of harm to Plaintiff.

868. Each Defendant has breached its duties of care owed to Plaintiff through its affirmative malfeasance, actions, business decisions, and policies in the development, setup, management, maintenance, operation, marketing, advertising, promotion, supervision, and control of its respective platforms. Those breaches include:

- a. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably creates or increases the foreseeable risk of addiction to, compulsive use of, or overuse of the platform by youth, including Plaintiff's students;
- b. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably creates or increases the foreseeable risk of harm to the physical and mental health and well-being of youth users, including

Plaintiff's students, including but not limited to dissociative behavior, withdrawal symptoms, social isolation, depression, anxiety, suicide and suicidal ideation, body dysmorphia, self-harm, sleep deprivation, insomnia, eating disorders, and death;

- c. Including features and algorithms in their respective platforms that, as described above, are currently structured and operated in a manner that unreasonably exposes youth users to sexual predators and sexual exploitation, including features that recommend or encourage youth users to connect with adult strangers on or through the platform;
- d. Maintaining unreasonably dangerous features and algorithms in their respective platforms after notice that such features and algorithms, as structured and operated, posed a foreseeable risk of harm to the physical and mental health and well-being of youth users;
- e. Facilitating use of their respective platforms by youth under the age of 13, including by adopting protocols that do not ask for or verify the age or identity of users or by adopting ineffective age and identity verification protocols; and
- f. Facilitating unsupervised and/or hidden use of their respective platforms by youth, including by adopting protocols that allow youth users to create multiple and private accounts and by offering features that allow youth users to delete, hide, or mask their usage.

869. Each Defendant has breached its duties of care owed to Plaintiff through its non-feasance, failure to act, and omissions in the development, setup, management, maintenance, operation, marketing, advertising, promotion, supervision, and control of its respective platforms. Those breaches include:

- a. Failing to implement effective protocols to block users under the age of 13;
- b. Failing to implement effective parental controls;
- c. Failing to implement reasonably available means to monitor for and limit or deter excessive frequency or duration of use of platforms by youth, including patterns, frequency, or duration of use that are indicative of addiction, compulsive use, or overuse;
- d. Failing to implement reasonably available means to limit or deter use of platforms by youth during ordinary times for school or sleep;

- e. Failing to implement reasonably available means to set up and operate its platforms without algorithms and features, discussed above, that rely on unreasonably dangerous methods (such as endless scroll, autoplay, IVR, social comparison, and others) as a means to engage youth users;
- f. Failing to set up, monitor, and modify the algorithms used on their platforms to prevent the platforms from actively driving youth users into unsafe, distorted, and unhealthy online experiences, including highly sexualized, violent, and predatory environments and environments promoting eating disorders and suicide;
- g. Failing to implement reasonably available means to monitor for, report, and prevent the use of their platforms by sexual predators to victimize, abuse, and exploit youth users; and
- h. Failing to provide effective mechanisms for youth users and their parents/guardians to report abuse or misuse of the platforms.

870. A reasonable company under the same or similar circumstances as each Defendant would have developed, set up, managed, maintained, supervised, and operated its platforms in a manner that is safer for and more protective of youth users like Plaintiff's students.

871. Plaintiff has directly experienced the harmful effects of youth social media addiction and the youth mental health crisis caused by Defendants' manipulative and exploitative social media platforms.

872. Each Defendant's breach of one or more of its duties was a substantial factor in causing harms and injuries to Plaintiff.

873. Plaintiff has been forced to spend substantial time, money, and resources to specifically address the harms caused by Defendants' social media platforms.

874. Plaintiff's injuries cannot be wholly remedied by monetary relief and such remedies at law are inadequate.

875. The nature of the fraudulent and unlawful acts that caused harm to Plaintiff students are not the type of risks that are immediately apparent from using Defendants' respective

platforms. Many of Plaintiff's students are continuing to use Defendants' respective platforms. When Plaintiff's students use Defendants' respective platforms, they will not be independently able to verify whether Defendants' respective platforms continue to pose an unreasonable risk or rely on Defendants' respective representations in the future. Such circumstances will continue to cause harm to Plaintiff.

876. Each Defendant's conduct, as described above, was intentional, fraudulent, willful, wanton, reckless, malicious, fraudulent, oppressive, extreme, and outrageous, and displayed an entire want of care and a conscious and depraved indifference to the consequences of their conduct, including to the health, safety, and welfare of their customers, and warrants an award of punitive damages in an amount sufficient to punish the Defendants and deter others from like conduct.

877. Plaintiff demands judgment against each Defendant for injunctive relief and for compensatory, treble, and punitive damages, together with interest, costs of suit, attorneys' fees, and all such other relief as the Court deems proper.

COUNT III

FRAUDULENT CONCEALMENT AND MISREPRESENTATION (Against Meta)

878. Plaintiff realleges and incorporates by reference each preceding and succeeding paragraph as though set forth fully at length herein.

879. This claim is brought against Meta.

880. As set forth in more detail above, Meta knew about the dangerous condition of Instagram and Facebook and that the platforms posed serious health risks to users.

881. Meta was under a duty to tell the public the truth and to disclose the dangerous condition of Instagram and Facebook and that the platforms posed serious health risks to users, particularly youth.

882. Meta breached its duty to the public, including Plaintiff, by concealing, failing to disclose, and making misstatements about the serious safety risks presented by Instagram and Facebook. Even though Meta knew of those risks based on Meta's internal studies, external studies known to Meta, and [REDACTED], it intentionally concealed those findings, in order not to lose users and advertising revenue, and to induce youth to continue using Instagram and Facebook. Worse still, Meta made numerous partial material representations downplaying any potential harm associated with Instagram and Facebook and reassuring the public, Congress, and parents that these platforms were safe.

883. By intentionally concealing and failing to disclose defects inherent in the design of Instagram and Facebook, Meta knowingly and recklessly misled the public into believing these platforms were safe for children to use.

884. By intentionally making numerous partial material representations, downplaying any potential harm associated with Instagram and Facebook, and reassuring the public, and Congress that it was safe, Meta fraudulently misled the public into believing Instagram and Facebook were safe for children to use.

885. Meta knew that its concealment, misstatements, and omissions were material. A reasonable person would find information that impacted the users' health, safety, and well-being, such as serious adverse health risks associated with the use of Instagram and Facebook, to be important when deciding whether to use, or continue to use, those platforms.

886. As a direct and proximate result of Meta's material omissions, misrepresentations, and concealment of material information, users were not aware and could not have been aware of

the facts that Meta concealed or misstated, and therefore justifiably and reasonably believed that Instagram and Facebook were safe for children to use.

887. Plaintiff is a caretaker of the health, safety, and wellbeing of its students, teachers, and staff and has a duty to provide educational services and care—including physical, mental, and emotional care—for the children of their community.

888. Each Defendant owed a duty of care to Plaintiff to avoid unreasonable risk of harm caused by their social media platforms because it is reasonably foreseeable that Plaintiff would bear the burden of providing physical, mental, and emotional care to its students arising out of the harmful effects of each Defendant's manipulative, addictive, and exploitative social media platforms.

889. Imposing a duty on Defendants would benefit the community at large.

890. Imposing a duty on Defendants would not be burdensome to them because they have the technological and financial means to avoid the risks of harm to Plaintiff.

891. Plaintiff has directly experienced the harmful effects of youth social media addiction and the youth mental health crisis caused by Defendants' manipulative and exploitative social media platforms.

892. Each Defendant's breach of one or more of its duties was a substantial factor in causing harms and injuries to Plaintiff.

893. Plaintiff has been forced to spend substantial time, money, and resources to specifically address the harms caused by Defendants' social media platforms.

894. Meta's conduct, as described above, was intentional, fraudulent, willful, wanton, reckless, malicious, fraudulent, oppressive, extreme, and outrageous, and displayed an entire want of care and a conscious and depraved indifference to the consequences of its conduct, including to

the health, safety, and welfare of its customers, and warrants an award of punitive damages in an amount sufficient to punish Meta and deter others from like conduct.

895. Plaintiff demands judgment against Meta for compensatory, treble, and punitive damages, together with interest, costs of suit, attorneys' fees, and all such other relief as the Court deems proper.

COUNT IV

NEGLIGENT CONCEALMENT AND MISREPRESENTATION (Against Meta)

896. Plaintiff realleges and incorporates by reference each preceding and succeeding paragraph as though set forth fully at length herein.

897. This claim is brought against Meta.

898. As set forth in more detail above, Meta knew about the dangerous condition of the Instagram and Facebook platforms and that the platforms posed serious health risks to users, particularly youth.

899. Meta was under a duty to tell the public the truth and to disclose the dangerous design of Instagram and Facebook and that the platforms posed serious health risks to users.

900. Meta owed a heightened duty of care to minor users of its platforms because children's brains are not fully developed, resulting in a diminished capacity to make responsible decisions regarding the frequency and intensity of social media usage. Children are also more neurologically vulnerable than adults to the addictive aspects of Instagram and Facebook, such as the peer approval that comes from amassing follows and likes.

901. Meta breached its duty to the public and failed to take reasonable care by concealing, failing to disclose, and making misstatements about the serious safety risks presented by its platforms. Even though Meta knew of those risks based on Meta's internal studies, external

studies known to Meta, and [REDACTED], Meta negligently concealed those findings, in order not to lose users and advertising revenue, and to induce children to continue using its platforms. Worse still, Meta negligently made numerous partial material representations downplaying any potential harm associated with its platforms and reassuring the public and parents its platforms were safe.

902. By concealing and failing to disclose, or taking reasonable care to disclose the defects, Meta negligently misled users and their parents into believing Instagram and Facebook were safe for children to use.

903. By making numerous partial material representations downplaying any potential harm associated with its platforms and reassuring the public and Congress that its platforms were safe, Meta negligently misled the public into believing Meta's platforms were safe for use.

904. As a direct and proximate result of Meta's material omissions, misrepresentations, and concealment of material information, users were not aware and could not have been aware of the facts that Meta concealed or misstated, and therefore justifiably and reasonably believed that Instagram and Facebook were safe for use.

905. Plaintiff is a caretaker of the health, safety, and wellbeing of its students, teachers, and staff and has a duty to provide educational services and care—including physical, mental, and emotional care—for the children of their community.

906. Each Defendant owed a duty of care to Plaintiff to avoid unreasonable risk of harm caused by their social media platforms because it is reasonably foreseeable that Plaintiff would bear the burden of providing physical, mental, and emotional care to its students arising out of the harmful effects of each Defendant's manipulative, addictive, and exploitative social media platforms.

907. Imposing a duty on Defendants would benefit the community at large.

908. Imposing a duty on Defendants would not be burdensome to them because they have the technological and financial means to avoid the risks of harm to Plaintiff.

909. Plaintiff has directly experienced the harmful effects of youth social media addiction and the youth mental health crisis caused by Defendants' manipulative and exploitative social media platforms.

910. Each Defendant's breach of one or more of its duties was a substantial factor in causing harms and injuries to Plaintiff.

911. Plaintiff has been forced to spend substantial time, money, and resources to specifically address the harms caused by Defendants' social media platforms.

912. Meta's conduct, as described above, was intentional, fraudulent, willful, wanton, reckless, malicious, fraudulent, oppressive, extreme, and outrageous, and displayed an entire want of care and a conscious and depraved indifference to the consequences of its conduct, including to the health, safety, and welfare of their customers, and warrants an award of punitive damages in an amount sufficient to punish them and deter others from like conduct.

913. Plaintiffs demand judgment against Meta for compensatory, treble, and punitive damages, together with interest, costs of suit, attorneys' fees, and all such other relief as the Court deems proper.

PRAYER FOR RELIEF

Plaintiff demands judgment against each of the Defendants to the full extent of the law, including but not limited to:

- a. judgment for Plaintiff and against each Defendant;

- b. damages (both past and future) to compensate Plaintiff for injuries sustained as a result of the marketing, distribution, and operation of Defendants' social media platforms;
- c. exemplary, treble, and punitive damages in an amount in excess of the jurisdictional limits;
- d. attorneys' fees;
- e. experts' fees;
- f. costs of litigation;
- g. pre-judgment and post-judgment interest at the lawful rate;
- h. declaratory relief including, but not limited to, a declaration that each Defendant dangerously designed its respective platforms and failed to provide adequate warnings;
- i. injunctive relief including, but not limited to, ordering each Defendant to stop the harmful conduct alleged herein, remedy the unreasonably dangerous features in its social media platforms, provide adequate warnings to minor users and parents that its platforms are addictive and pose a clear and present danger to unsuspecting minors, and prevent future violations of law; and
- j. any other relief as this Court may deem equitable and just, or that may be available.

JURY DEMAND

Plaintiff demands a trial by jury on all issues so triable.

Dated: April 14, 2023

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ Daniel C. Levin

Michael M. Weinkowitz *

Daniel C. Levin

Nicholas J. Elia *

LEVIN SEDRAN & BERMAN LLP

510 Walnut Street, Suite 500

Philadelphia, PA 19106

Tel: (215) 592-1500
mweinkowitz@lfsblaw.com
dlevin@lfsblaw.com
nelia@lfsblaw.com

D. Aaron Rihn
ROBERT PEIRCE & ASSOCIATES
707 Grant Street, Suite 125
Pittsburgh, PA 15219
Tel: (844) 383-0565
arihn@peircelaw.com

Ira Weiss
WEISS BURKARDT KRAMER, LLC
445 Fort Pitt Boulevard, Suite 503
Pittsburgh, PA 15219
Tel: (412) 391-9890
iweiss@wbklegal.com

Counsel for Plaintiff

** Pro hac vice anticipated*